

TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

ESSEX

ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

---

VOL. III.

---

COLCHESTER:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED FOR THE SOCIETY AT  
THE ESSEX AND WEST SUFFOLK GAZETTE OFFICE.

---

M.DCCC.LXV

# CONTENTS.

## VOL. III.

		PAGE
I.	<i>Pedigree of Marney</i> .. .. .	1
II.	<i>Architectural Notes on Layer Marney Hall, Essex; and on the Parish Church Adjoining.</i> By CHARLES FORSTER HAYWARD .. .. .	16
III.	<i>A Letter, containing Further Particulars in further illustration of the Early History of Waltham Abbey.</i> By SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H. .. .. .	33
IV.	<i>The Influence of the County of Essex on the Settlement and Family History of New England.</i> By COLONEL JOSEPH LEMUEL CHESTER .. .. .	37
V.	<i>The Church of St. Nicholas, Little Coggeshall.</i> By the REV. W. J. DAMPIER .. .. .	48
VI.	<i>Ancient Wills (No. 2).</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	53
VII.	<i>The Shaksperes of Essex.</i> By AUGUSTUS CHARLES VELEY .. 64 <i>Pedigree of the Shaksperes of Stratford on Avon.</i> <i>Pedigree of the Shaksperes of Essex.</i>	
VIII.	<i>Ancient Wills (No. 3).</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	75
IX.	<i>The Strangman Pedigree.</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	95
X.	<i>Roman Sepulchral Remains at East Ham, read at the Meeting at Leytonstone, held February 16th, 1864.</i> By the REV. E. F. BOYLE .. .. .	104
XI.	<i>Comparative Notes on the Roman Sarcophagus and Leaden Coffins discovered at East Ham.</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	110
	<i>The Strangman Pedigree—Addendum</i> .. .. .	116
XII.	<i>A Translation of the First Book of Palladius on Husbandrie, Edited from a MS. of the 15th Century.</i> By BARTON LODGE, A.M. .. .. .	117
	<i>Corrigenda to ditto</i> .. .. .	162
	<i>Glossary to ditto</i> .. .. .	163
XIII.	<i>Ancient Wills (No. 4).</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	167
XIV.	<i>The Tyrell Badge.</i> By H. W. KING .. .. .	198
XV.	<i>Notes on a Monumental Brass Effigy in Great Parndon Church.</i> By GEORGE H. ROGERS HARRISON, F.S.A. .. .. .	204

# LIST OF PLATES.

VOL. III.

---

	PAGE
I. <i>Frontispiece</i> —Layer Marney Hall .. .. .	1
II. General Plan—Showing First-floor of Buildings .. .. .	20
III. Dormitory .. .. .	22
IV. Sections of ditto .. .. .	22
V. Terra-cotta Details .. .. .	27
VI. Chimneys, &c. .. .. .	28
VII. Sections of Tower .. .. .	24
VIII. Pavement from Chapel at Little Coggeshall, Essex .. .. .	51
IX. Roman Sarcophagus and Leaden Coffins discovered at East Ham .. .. .	104
X. Lithograph—taken from the Original MS. .. .. .	117
XI. Badges of the Tyrrels .. .. .	201

---

# LIST OF WOODCUTS.

VOL. III.

---

	PAGE
1. Course of Red Brick or Tile.. .. .	49
2. Wall Plate .. .. .	51
3. Monumental Brass Effigy, from the Church of Great Parndon, Essex .. .. .	204

## INDEX TO VOL. III.

---

A.				PAGE
A'Becket, Thomas (Archbishop)	....	....	....	31
Abell	....	....	....	38
Adams	....	....	....	38
Albans' (St.), admission to Fraternity of Abbey	....	....	....	81
Allen	....	....	....	38
Alove	....	....	....	177
Alrichseye	....	....	....	36
Althorne	....	....	....	195
Ames	....	....	....	38
Amphoræ, urns enclosed in	....	....	....	111
Anchorites, bequests for	....	....	....	170, 172
Angier	....	....	....	38
Anjou, Margaret of (badge)	....	....	....	199
Apostle Spoons	....	....	....	179, 185
Apparel, Inventory of	....	....	....	69
——— Bequests of	....	....	....	69
Appleton, Family	....	....	....	38, 191, 196
Archdeaconry of Essex, Wills in	....	....	....	64
Archer	....	....	....	38
Arden (Shakspeare Pedigree)	....	....	....	74
Armour, Bequests of	....	....	....	177, 182
——— Coat	....	....	....	173
Arms, Bequest of	....	....	....	69
——— Banner of	....	....	....	182, 201
——— in Church Windows and Chantries	....	....	....	173
Arnold	....	....	....	38
Arragon, Catherine of (badge)	....	....	....	199
——— Protest against Marriage of	....	....	....	12, 18
Arsick, Sir R.	....	....	....	103
Arthur, J., Will of	....	....	....	67
Arundel Church, Terra Cotta monument	....	....	....	31
——— of Lanherne, family	....	....	....	8, 9
Assington, Rogers of	....	....	....	40
Assumption of B. V. Mary	....	....	....	187
Asteley family	....	....	....	184, 186
Athelstan, Son of Tovi	....	....	....	34
Atkinson	....	....	....	38
Atte Hoo	....	....	....	97, 99
Audley, Lord	....	....	....	14
Augustine Canons, Blackmore Priory	....	....	....	55

	PAGE
Austin Friars Church, London ; Tyrrell family	80
Aveley Church, Old Chair in	200
Averell family	195
——— Bartholomew, Will of	195
<b>B.</b>	
Badburham	36
Badcocke	101
Baddow (Much) Will of Arthur of	67
Badge of Marney	151
——— Tyrrell	198
——— Catherine of Arragon	199
——— Bourchier	200
——— Margaret of Anjou	199
Baker	109
Baldwin	2
Banner of Arms	201, 202
Bardolph, E., arms of	205
Bardville	89
Barham	35
Barker	38
Barking, Abbey	93
——— Roman materials at	112
Barkley, Sir E.	169, 174
Barnard, Sir J. (Shakspere Pedigree)	74
Barnardiston family	97, 102, 116
Barnes	38
Baroun (Strangman Pedigree)	99
Bartholomæus Anglicus, " De proprietabus rerum "	83
Bartholomew, St., Black Friars	71
Bathon	10, 83
Battaille (Strangman Pedigree)	97, 99
Battle Abbey	2
Battle Cry	201
Baynard	103
Bead Roll	171
Beads, Bidding of	171
——— Bequest of	88
Beauchamp	97
Beaufort, Cardinal (masses ordered)	172
Beaupre	97, 103
Becket, Archbishop, Act of Henry II. in honour of	31
Beeches	85, 87
Belhus	200
Bell	38
Bemflect (North) chasuble	81
——— Bequest to	88, 89
——— Manor	89
Bendall	38
Bennet	38
Berdfield	89

	PAGE
Bethnal Green, Roman Coffin . . . . .	113, 114
Bergholt (West), Manor of Cook's Hall . . . . .	175
Bidding Bends . . . . .	171
——— Prayer . . . . .	171
Biggs . . . . .	38
Bigland . . . . .	101
Bindon, Visc . . . . .	9
Bishopsgate, Anchorite of . . . . .	172
Blackheath, Battle of . . . . .	14
Blackmore, Will of Smyth of . . . . .	55
——— Manor and Priory . . . . .	55
Blake . . . . .	38, 178
Blenceoe . . . . .	205
Bloomfield . . . . .	38
Blount . . . . .	169, 174
Blyttæt . . . . .	101
Bobbingworth, Brooke of, Will . . . . .	65
Bode . . . . .	101
Bomyng Mille . . . . .	83
Bonham, Wife of . . . . .	8, 9
Boreham . . . . .	203
Bottle for casting perfumes . . . . .	182
Borgatt . . . . .	202
Bourbon, Sir Jacques of . . . . .	199
Bourchier, badge . . . . .	200
Boteler . . . . .	167
Bourne . . . . .	38
Bowen (Knot) . . . . .	200
Bower Hall, West Mersey . . . . .	169
Bowes (Strangman Pedigree) . . . . .	100
Boyle, Rev E. F., Roman Sepulchral Remains at East Ham . . . . .	104
Bradbury . . . . .	38
Bradwell . . . . .	99, 100
Brandon, Duke of Suffolk . . . . .	19
Brass effigy of Archbishop Harsnet . . . . .	81
Brasses . . . . .	189
Broxted (Great) Church, Vestment bequeathed to . . . . .	173
Braybrooke (Lord), Badges of . . . . .	203
Breton . . . . .	5
Brewster . . . . .	38
Brick (moulded) use of in Essex . . . . .	16, 25, 26
Brickhill . . . . .	14
Bridges, Bequest for repairing . . . . .	58, 88
Brikendure, De . . . . .	35
Briscoe . . . . .	38
Brooke . . . . .	38
——— of Bobbingworth, Will of . . . . .	65
Brooks, Christopher . . . . .	74
Browne . . . . .	38
——— Sir W. . . . .	177

	PAGE
Bruyn, Sir W. ....	8
Buckingham, Duke of, arrested	14
Buckingham, Borough of ....	14
Bulkeley ....	38
Bumpstead Helions ....	169
Burgate ....	202
Burghersh family ....	1
Burstead (Little), Bequest to Church	81
Burton ....	38
Bush (Shakspere Pedigree) ....	74
Buttsbury, Tyrell of ....	76
— Church ....	81, 82
Button ....	38
Byrch ....	192
C.	
Cambridge, St. John's College, founded	28
— King's College Chapel ....	28
Canewdon ....	195
Canfield, Stone Hall ....	204
Canterbury, Christchurch ....	81
Canute, Tovi, Standard bearer of	33
Canvillo, Thomas de ....	10
Carey ....	97
Carrington ....	38, 55
Casting Bottle ....	182
Carrowe, Anchorite of ....	172
Catenham ....	35
Catherine of Arragon (badge) ....	199
— Protest against Marriage of	12, 18
Caumpes, Ecl. de ....	36
Century, 16th, Characteristics of	17
— Price of Commodities ....	68
Chalk, Use of ....	17
Chamberlain ....	38
Chamberleyn ....	103
Chapman ....	38
Charterhouse ....	170
— Bequest to ....	81
Chasuble ....	81, 173
— of blue color ....	81
Chaucer Family ....	1
Chaulton ....	172
Chelmsford Church, Bequest to	68, 170
— Friars ....	82
Cherington ....	100
Chester, Colonel J. L., The Influence of the County of Essex on the Settlement and Family History of New England ....	37
Chignal Church ....	68
Chigwell, Effigy of Archbishop Harsnet	81, 179
Childerditch Church, Bequest to	67

	PAGE
Chingford, Manors in	204
—— Church, Robbery of Brasses	189
—— Altar Tomb and Effigies	204
Churches of Essex, Patron Saints of	67
Cypress-chests	179
Cists	205
Clare, Convent	170
Clares (Poor)	171
Clarke	38
Clement	103
Clergy, Opportunities of describing Local Antiquities	109
Clifford, Baron	187
Clopton	172
Cockayne, J.	91
Cocke, T.	192
—— Family	191
Coffin, Roman Interments in	104, 110, 111, 112
—— Drawings	110
Coffin, Sir W. de	79
Coggeshall family	38
—— Sir W. De	103
Coggeshall (Little), St. Nicholas Church	48
—— Pavement, coloured plate	50
Cognizance borne by families	198
Colchester, Lead Coffins	112, 114
—— Coins	114
—— Abbey of St. John	18
—— Convents	170
Coldham	38
Cole	38
—— Archdeacon, Bequest to	69
Coleman	38
Collectanea Antiqua, R. Smith	110
Colling	38
Continent, Families invited by English Kings from	3
Cooke	38, 101, 177
Cooper	38
Copdowe, Thomas	180
Cope worn at Communion Service	81
—— at Westminster	81
—— at Chigwell	81
Cornburgh, Avery	171
Cornishmen—Battle of Blackheath	14
Cornwallis, Sir J.	182
Cotton	38
Coventry, Joust at	199
Court of Probate, Permission to consult Wills	51
Crane	38, 102
Crayford, R.	179
Cremation of bodies among Romans	51



	PAGE
Cressing Church .....	173
Cricksea Mansion destroyed ..	77
Cromwell, Lord .....	83, 84
Cross .....	38
Cross in Banner of St. George .....	201
Culeworth .....	10
Cypress, Chests of .....	179
D.	
Dacre (Knot) ..	200
Dagenham .....	112
Daisy ; Badge of Margaret of Anjou .....	199
Dallaway on Italian Artists in England .....	26
Dalton .....	38
Dampier, W. J., The Church of St. Nicholas, Little Coggleshall .....	48
Daniel, J. ....	177
Darcy, Lord .....	13, 19
—— Family ..	83, 90
—— Robert, Masses ordered by .....	172
Darell, Lady .....	97
Devenish .....	38
Davies .....	38
Davis .....	38
Davy .....	38
Day .....	38
Dean .....	38
Delamere, Strangman Pedigree .....	100
Delawar, Badge .....	199
Devereux .....	90
Devices, Heraldic .....	198
Dinney .....	38, 47
Doctors' Commons, Wills at .....	53, 54
Dole at Funerals .....	172, 184
Donatus (St.) Castle .....	26
Doreward, Pedigree .....	97, 102
Dormitory in Ancient Houses .....	22
Downton Church, Bequest to .....	81
Downes .....	100
Downham .....	91, 176
—— Church, Tomb of Sir H. Tyrell .....	177
Dudley .....	38
Dunton, Tyrell Arms .....	202
—— Church, Tyrell Arms .....	81, 202
Durward, <i>see</i> Doreward .....	97
Dyer .....	38
E.	
Easter Sepulchre .....	80
East Ham, Roman Sepulchral Remains .....	104, 110
—— Roman Sarcophagus, &c. ....	110
—— Drawings of Roman Remains .....	110

	PAGE
East Ham, Brass Plate to Rampston .....	205
——— Dr. Stukeley, Buried at .....	105
Eastwood Church, P. S. ....	68
Eaton .....	38
Ecclesiastical Vestments .....	81
Edward I., Special Commission, and Hundred Rolls, or Rotuli Hundredorum .....	11
Elizabethan Domestic Architecture, Influence of Italian art on .....	28
Elliot .....	38
Ellis, Sir H., Letter on Waltham Abbey .....	33
Ely .....	38
Emery .....	38
Emwelle, De .....	36
England (New) Influence of County of Essex on List of earliest Settlers in .....	39 38
Engueran de Portier .....	5, 13
Epping Manor .....	13
——— Church .....	35, 68
Escallop on Roman Coffins .....	114
Essex, Use of Moulded Brick in .....	16
——— Churches, Patron Saints of .....	67, 68
——— Forest of .....	168
——— Families, Wills of .....	54
——— Friars Houses, Bequest to .....	88
——— History of .....	197
——— Influence in settlement of New England of .....	37
Eue, Earl of .....	199

## F.

Fabian .....	177
Fairstead Church, Vestments for .....	173
Fambridge .....	195
Fancourt .....	99
Farr .....	38
Faulkourn .....	91, 102
——— Manor .....	91, 167
Fauntley, Strangman Pedigree .....	100
Ferrers .....	102
——— Lord .....	19, 90
Firmin .....	38
Fiske .....	38
Fitch .....	38
Fitzlangley .....	103
Fitz Lewis family .....	89
Fitzwalter, Lord .....	12
Flemings, Mansion .....	77, 181
——— Manor of .....	180
Fobbing Church .....	68

	PAGE
Ford	38
Foroigners favoured by English Kings after Roman Conquest	4
Fortescue	84, 102, 167, 169
Fotheringhay	103
Foulness	192
Fowler	38
France, Les Archives des Monuments Historiques	19
—— Care of Monuments by Government	19
—— John, King of, Captive	190
Franciscan	171
Freeborn	38
Freeman	38
French	38
Fuller	38
—— Will	68
Funeral Doles	172
Fylioll (Strangman Pedigree)	99

## G.

Gardener	38
George, St., Cross in Banner of	201
Geoffrey	100
Gernon, Ralph	9
—— Avice	9
Geyst, Eccl. de	36
Geystwaite, Eccl. de	36
Gibbs	39
Gibson	39
Gildeford	35
Gill	39
Gipping, Tyrell of	75, 81, 200
Glanvill (Bartholomæus Anglicus)	83
Glossary, from old English MS.	163
Godfrey	39
Goff	39
Gosfield Hall, Court	21, 169
Gothic, Buildings in late	28
—— Influence of Italian art on	31
Grafton	39
Grays Church	81
Greene	39
Greenwich, Franciscan Friars	71
Guerre, cri de	201
Guild, Rawreth	89
—— Prittlewell	192
Guilford	103
Guydon allowed to Esquires	202
Gwydo Decanus	34
Gyngraff Church, Bequest to	81

## H.

	PAGE
Hadleigh, Strangman of .....	100, 101
——— Castle .....	168
——— Church, P. S. ....	68
Hale .....	39
Hall .....	195
Ham (East) ( <i>see</i> East Ham) .....	104
——— — Roman Sepulchral Remains at .....	104
Hampden Family .....	1
Hampton Court .....	3, 18, 26, 28
——— Medallions .....	26
Hanchet, J., Rampston Monument .....	204
Hanningfield Church .....	81
Hardynge .....	101
Harkney .....	101
Harleian MSS. ....	34
Harlston, J. ....	175
Harold .....	33
Harrington, Knot .....	200
Harris .....	39
——— W., Will of .....	183
——— Family....	184
Harrison .....	39
——— Rogers, G. H., F.S.A., Notes on Monumental Brass Effigy in Great Parndon Church .....	204
Harriet, (Archbishop) Cope of, at Chigwell Church .....	81
——— Brass Effigy .....	81
Hart .....	39
Hasteler, T., Will of .....	188
——— J. ....	191
Hatchments in Churches .....	173
Havering, Shakspeare of .....	71
Havering-atte-Bower .....	168
Haward .....	100
Hawkes .....	39
Hawkins .....	39
Hawkwell .....	103
Hawkwood, Sir John .....	79
Haye, De la .....	5
——— Edith .....	5
Haynes .....	39
Hayward, C. F., Architectural Notes on Layer Marney .....	16
Haywood .....	39
Hazelcigh, Roman Sarcophagus .....	112, 113, 116
Hedingham (Castle), Tomb of John De Vere .....	31
Helion, J. ....	169
Hemnals .....	91
Heneage, Knot....	200
Henry II., Reconstruction of Waltham Abbey by .....	34
Henry IV. ....	11

	PAGE
Henry V. ....	11, 79
House for Nuns at Isleworth, built by .....	71
Carthusian Priory at Richmond, endowed by .....	71
Henry VI., ....	11, 79, 168
Henry VII., H. Marney ....	6
Convent at Greenwich founded by .....	71
Henry VIII., H. Marney .....	6
at New Hall ....	29
Herbert, Lord ....	19
Heron, Family....	101
Sir W.....	167
Manor....	75
Hall ....	76, 77
Chapel....	84
Herrys ....	101
Hertford, All Saints .....	35
Heywde ....	35
Highways, Bequests for Repairing .....	172
Historical Monuments preserved by French Government .....	19
Hoo ( <i>see</i> Atte-Hoo) ....	97, 99
Hopkins ....	69
Hopton ....	179
Horkosley (Little), Tomb of Dame Bridget Marnay .....	31
Horn of Unicorn .....	176, 198
Hornchurch, Shakspeare of .....	71, 72
Horndon-on-the-Hill .....	68
Tyrell Family .....	76, 177
Horndon (East) Church, Monuments destroyed .....	77, 81
Chantries ....	78, 79
Chasuble bequeathed to .....	81
Work of Tower .....	82
Horreth ....	36
Horsham ....	99
Household Badge .....	195, 198
Housel ....	193
Howard ....	100
Howe ....	39
Howncstone ....	81, 170
Hubbard ....	39
Hudson ....	39
Hullbridge ....	174
Humphries ....	39
Hungerford, Knot .....	200
Hunsdon, Lord....	102
Hussey, Lord ....	19
I.	
Ingatstone Church, P.S. ....	68
Inscriptions on Monuments, Value of .....	190
Interment, Modes of Roman....	111
Isleworth ....	79

	PAGE
Italian work . . . . .	25, 26
——— Influence on late Gothic . . . . .	28, 31
<b>J.</b>	
Jackson . . . . .	39
Jeffrey . . . . .	39
Jenner . . . . .	39
Jenney . . . . .	101
Jenyn . . . . .	39, 101
Jernegan . . . . .	184
Jervis, Mansion destroyed . . . . .	77
Jesus College . . . . .	70
——— Confraternity at Prittlewell . . . . .	192
John of France (prisoner) . . . . .	199
Jousts, Devices used at . . . . .	198
<b>K.</b>	
Katherine of Arragon, Protest of Prince of Wales against Marriage of . . . . .	12, 19
——— Marriage of . . . . .	13
——— Badge . . . . .	199
Keble . . . . .	39
Kemp, Sir T. . . . .	98, 102
Kempe . . . . .	39
Kent Road (Old) Roman Coffins . . . . .	114
King . . . . .	39
King, H. W., Ancient Wills . . . . .	53, 75, 167
——— Strangman Pedigree . . . . .	95
——— Notes on Roman Sarcophagus and Leaden Coffins discovered . . . . .	
at East Ham . . . . .	110
——— Tyrell Badge . . . . .	198
——— Standard . . . . .	201
——— Etching . . . . .	201
Kinge, Strangman pedigree . . . . .	100
Kings' Langley . . . . .	71
Knight . . . . .	178
Knollis, Sir R. . . . .	81
Knots borne as Household Badges . . . . .	200
Knyvet . . . . .	103
<b>L.</b>	
Lacy, Badge of . . . . .	200
Lake . . . . .	39
Lambert . . . . .	39
Langham . . . . .	79
——— Manor of . . . . .	75
Lanherne, Arundel of . . . . .	89
Langley, R. . . . .	167
——— (King's) Priory . . . . .	71
Lathum . . . . .	102
Layer, Derivation of . . . . .	5
Layer, Richard . . . . .	9
——— Lords of . . . . .	5

	PAGE
Layer Marney .....	29, 30
----- Advowson .....	2, 9, 11
----- Alms-house .....	172
----- Church .....	9, 29
----- Chantries .....	9, 29, 30
----- Colloge .....	11, 29
----- Effigies and Tombs .....	29, 30, 31
----- Hall, Architectural notes on, by C. F. Hayward .....	16
----- Plan, Elevation, Sections, and Details .....	20, 28
----- Chimneys .....	27
----- Plate .....	28
----- Dormitory (plate ditto) .....	22
----- Fireplaces .....	22, 25
----- Gateway .....	20, 23
----- Newell Staircase .....	24
----- Roofs .....	21, 22
----- Tower .....	23
----- Terra Cotta .....	25, 26
----- Windows .....	22, 27, 30
----- Plaster .....	25
----- Parapet .....	27
----- Free Warren .....	11
Layer Marney— <i>see</i> also Marney	
Lazars, Houses of .....	170
Lazer, Sir .....	8
Lead in Roman Coffins .....	104, 110, 111, 112
Leger, De .....	4, 5
Legera (Layer)....	5
Leicester, W., Will of .....	66
Leigh, Monumental destruction at .....	190
Lepor Houses .....	170
Lewis, Davy .....	177
Leyton (Low) Tomb of J. Strype .....	190
Light, Sepulchre .....	82
Lightfoot .....	39
Lime in Roman Sarcophagi .....	112
Lincoln, Earl of, Battle of Stoke .....	14
Lire, Wood of ; <i>see</i> Layer	
Locke Lazer House, Southwark .....	170
Lockwood .....	39
Lodge, Rev. Barton ; Translation of Palladius on Husbandrie, edited by ----- Glossary ..	117 163
London Registry of Wills, Researches in....	54
Longueville, Count de .....	13
Luckyn, G. ....	204
Luketune .....	35
Lynn, Strangman of .....	99
----- Anchorite .....	172

## M.

	PAGE
Mackwell, E. ....	175
Macwilliam Family .....	57
Magnalia of C. Mather .....	41
Maidens, Bequest for Marriage of .....	195
Malden .....	103
Maldon .....	170, 172
Manning, Will of .....	68
Mantell (Knight) .....	97, 99
Mareni .....	4, 29
Margaret of Anjou, Badge .....	199
Margaret, Countess of Richmond .....	6, 13, 28
Margaretting Church, Brasses of .....	189
Marigni in Normandy .....	4
—— family .....	11, 13
—— pedigree .....	13
—— Engueran de .....	13
Marini, De, <i>see</i> Marney	
—— Hugo de .....	2, 10
Marinis, Werry de .....	2, 16
Marney Family .....	2, 10, 17, 19, 296
—— Pedigrees .....	1, 8
—— Battle Abbey Roll .....	2
—— Badge .....	15
—— W. de .....	2, 3, 10, 29, 79
—— Sir W. .....	1, 175
—— Sir R. ....	2
—— Sir H., Honors conferred on .....	6, 12
—— Lord .....	3, 6, 7, 12, 172
—— Life of .....	7, 12, 14
—— Arrest of Duke of Buckingham .....	14
—— Quarrel with Cardinal Wolsey .....	9, 15
—— Dame Bridget, Tomb of .....	31
—— Monuments, &c., <i>see</i> Layer Marney	29
Marriage of Maidens, Bequest for .....	195
Marsh .....	39
Marshall .....	39
Martin .....	39
Mary, B.V., Assumption of .....	187
Maryni, de ; <i>see</i> Marney Pedigree .....	14
Masses ordered by Testament .....	172
Mather, Cotton ; Magnalia .....	41
Massachusetts Bay, List of Freemen of Colony .....	38
Meade .....	39
Medcalf, James ; Will of .....	69
Melreth Church .....	81
Melton Church .....	81
Mennes, T. ....	179
Mersea, West .....	169



	PAGE
Milan, Barnabas, Duke of ....	79
Mildmay, T. ....	182
Mildred, St. Church ....	71
Mills ....	39
Minoreesses ....	171
Minories, Roman Sarcophagus ....	113
Minot ....	39
Montacute, Cross found at ....	33
——— Lord ....	19
Montague ....	97
Montgomery Family ....	84, 91
——— Sir T., Will of....	81, 168
Month's mind ....	65, 195
Montjoy, <i>see</i> Mountjoy ....	12, 169, 174, 177
Monuments, (Historical), Care of French Government for ....	18
——— Marney Family ....	29
——— Tyrell ....	77
——— Destruction of ....	189
Morant, Learning and Industry of ....	196
——— Errors....	196
Morbeque, Sir Denys ....	199
More ....	39
Morrall ....	102
Morris ....	38
Morse ....	39
Morton, Cardinal ....	174
Mott ....	39
Motto ....	201
Mountjoy, Lord ....	12, 169, 174, 177
Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, Badge ....	199
Moyer Charity ....	190
Mucking Church, P.S. ....	68
Muckleton Church ....	81
Mumbi, De ....	36
Munday, Vincent ....	178

## N.

Nanton ....	103
Nash (Shakspeare Pedigree) ....	74
Nazing ....	35
Nelson ....	39
Nettlewell ....	35
Neville, badge ....	200
New Hall, Licence to fortify ....	212
——— Henry VIII. at ....	29
Newborne, Sir R. ....	8
Newburgh, Sir R ....	9
Nowman ....	39
Nicholas, St., Church, Little Coggeshall ....	48
Norbury, Sir Roger ....	167

	PAGE
Normans, Wealth and Ascendancy of	4
Norrys	179, 180
Northumberland, Earl of	184
Notley (White), Bequest to Church	173
Nottingham, Will of	179
Nutt	39
O.	
Ockendon (South) Rectory	2
——— Tyrell of	30, 75
——— (North) Pointz of	184
——— Church, Tablets of Pointz Family	184
Old Kent Road, Roman Coffins	114
Oliver, Doreward Pedigree	102
Ormond, Earl of	169
Orsett Church, Chantry	84
———Parish; Lands bequeathed to	84
Oamund, St., Rite of	171
Ottendon	10, 18
Oxford	28
P.	
Page	39
Paglesham, D.	97
Palladius de Rebus Rusticis; Translation in MS., Edited by Rev. B. Lodge	117
——— Glossary, ditto	163
Palmer	39
Parmenter	39
Parndon (Great) Church	203
——— Monumental Brass Effigy (plate)	204
Partridge	39
Parvis, Lord	19
Pasefend	35
Peachie, J., clerk, Bequest to	71
Peerage, usages at Creation of	3
Pelerin, William de	97
Pelham, John de	197
——— Badge of	197
Percy, T.	184
——— Standard	201
Peregrinus	97, 99
Perry	39
Peters	39
Petre, Sir W.	177, 169
——— Badge or Cognizance	203
Peverell	97
——— Badge	200
Philip, Son of John, King of France	199
Phillips	39
Pilborowe	101
Pilgrim Fathers	42

	PAGE
Pilgrimage, Vicarious	172
Plague in London	170
Plumberow, Manor of	85
Poitiers, Battle of	199
Pointz, Ann, Will of	184
——— Tablets of Family, N. Ockendon	184
Ponthien, Earl of	199
Poor, Bequests for	174
Portague	194
Porter	39
———Shakspeare Pedigree	74
Portier, Engueran de	4, 13
Poynings, Lord	9
Prayer (Bidding)	171
Prices of Commodities, 16th Century	68
Prittlewell, Church	192, 194
———Thomas Cocke, of	191
———Sir J. Tyrell	84
———Confraternity of Jesus	192
———Market	194
———Harris Family	184
———Haasteler	191
Purchas	39
Puritans, Settlement in New England	42
Pykenham	194
Pykering	58, 59
Pynchon	39
Pyne	39
	Q.
Quineye (Shakspeare Pedigree)	74
	R.
Raffale	28
Raiment, Bequest of	69, 178, 182
Rainham	195
———Church, P.S.	68
Rainsford	39
Ramsden Belhus, Roman Sarcophagus	112, 116
Ranston	175
Rawlins	39
Rawreth Church,	100
———Brass	188
———Vestments bequeathed	87
———Guild	89
———Land	89
———Hasteler of	188
———Shakspeare of	72
———Tyrell	75
———Beeches	79
Rayleigh	100, 101
Raymond	39

	PAGE
Raynsford .....	103
Religious Houses, Admission to Fraternity of .....	81
Restorers, Church Monuments damaged by .....	189, 196
Richmond .....	3, 12
——— Margaret, Countess of .....	6, 13, 28
——— Carthusian Priory .....	71
Richnesse .....	57
Riley .....	89
Ripon (Joan), Will of .....	69
Rissewrche .....	36
Rivenhall Church, Vestment for .....	173
——— Manor .....	91
Rivers .....	97
Roads, Bequests for mending .....	58, 88, 172
Roberts .....	39, 101
Robinson .....	39
Rochester, R. ....	175
——— John .....	90
——— Robert .....	177
Rock, Daniel, D.D., the Church of our Fathers, &c. ....	171
Rogers .....	39
Rolf, T. ....	169
Rolls Chapel, Tomb .....	27
——— Hundred. ....	11
Romford Church, P.S. ....	68
——— Epitaph of A. Cornburgh .....	171
——— Shakspeare of .....	72
Roman materials at Barking .....	112
——— entrenchment, Uphall .....	112
——— remains .....	104, 110, 112
——— interment in Lead Coffins .....	104, 110
——— modes of Interment .....	111
Rome, St. Peter's .....	28
——— Scala cœli .....	172
Roos, Lord de .....	12
Rosary bequeathed .....	88
Rotuli Hundredorum .....	11
Rowley, Roger of .....	40
Ruggles .....	39
Runwell, Will of Sulyard, of .....	180
——— Monument .....	183
Rychardson .....	74
S.	
Sadler .....	39
Saints (patron) of Essex Churches .....	67, 68
Salmon family .....	192
Salisbury Cathedral, Rite for .....	171
Salt .....	102
Saltonstall .....	39

	PAGE
Sammes .....	196
Sandford .....	39
Sands .....	39
———Lord .....	19
Santley .....	39
Sarcophagi (Roman) .....	111
——— at East Ham .....	105
Say, Lord .....	167
Scala coeli .....	172, 191
Scholars, Bequest for .....	88
Scott .....	39
Scrolles, Lord .....	8
Sepulchre (Easter) .....	80
——— Light .....	82
Sergeaux, Knt.....	9
Shackespere, T., Will of .....	70
Shackspear, Susan, Will of .....	71
——— Spelling of the Surname .....	72
Shakespear of Rawreth .....	72
Shakespeare of Romford .....	72
——— Joseph .....	71, 72
——— Thomas, Will .....	70
Shakspeares of Essex .....	64
——— Pedigree .....	74
Shaksperes of Stratford-on-Avon, Pedigree of .....	74
Sharp .....	39
Shaw .....	39
Sheen, Fathers of .....	71, 81, 170
Shenfield Church, P.S. ....	68
——— ——— Monuments buried at .....	196
Shepreth Church .....	81
Sherman .....	39
Shopland .....	192
Sibley, Isaac .....	184
Sion, Sisters of....	71, 81, 170
Skermly, Ecclesia .....	36
Smith .....	39, 100
——— C. Roach, Collectanea Antiqua .....	110
Smithfield, Priory of Augustines and Black Friars .....	71
Smyth, Will of....	55
——— Family....	55
Smythe, Strangman pedigree .....	97
Sople Church .....	81.
South Church, Easter Sepulchre .....	80
——— Land at .....	89
Southcott .....	39
Southminster, Harris of, Will .....	183
——— Averill of .....	195
Sparhawk .....	39
Sparver v. Sparvour, Canopy .....	182

	PAGE
Spencer .....	39
Spice .....	168, 169
Spoons (Apostle) .....	179, 185
Stafford Church .....	81
——— Knot ..	200
Stambridge .....	192
Stamp, H. ....	5
Standard, description of .....	201
Standards of Knights and Nobility in Essex .....	201
Stanford .....	35
Stanley .....	39
Stanstead, Manor .....	35
Stanway .....	35
Starke, Shakspeare pedigree....	74
Stations of the Cross .....	172
Stebbing .....	39
Steele .....	39
Steeple .....	100
Stevens .....	39
Stock Church .....	81
Stoke, Battle of ..	14
Stokesb. ....	36
Stone .....	39
Stone Cists, Funeral Urns in .....	111
——— Coffins....	111, 112
Strange .....	39
Strangman Pedigree, by H. W. King .....	95
——— Mother of .....	116
Stratford-le-Bow, Nunnery .....	82
——— Roman Remains....	112
Sudbury, Convents of .....	170
Sudley, Baron .....	167
Suffolk, Brandon, Duke of .....	19
Sulyard, Eustace, Will of .....	180
——— Monument .....	181
——— Family .....	180
——— Sir W. ....	180
Sunday-beads .....	171
Swan .....	39
Swift .....	39
Symonds .....	39
Symonson, Miles, Will ..	68
Sympson, T. ....	205
Sywardstone ..	35
T.	
Tabor .....	39
Takeley .....	35
Talcott .....	39
Tanfield, J., Monumental Brass .....	180

	PAGE
Tankerville, Earl of .....	199
Tapers, Bequest for .....	169
Tay, Lord of Layer .....	5
Taylor .....	39
Terling Church, Vestment for .....	173
Terra Cotta .....	25, 26
———— Tomb .....	30, 31
Tey, Great .....	91
Teye, de .....	5
Thomas .....	39
Thomas a'Becket, Vow of Hen. II. in honour of .....	34
Thompson .....	205
Thornbury ..	85
Thornton .....	39
Thorndue .....	35
Thresher .....	69
Throgmorton .....	9
Thundersley .....	89, 195
Thurrock Grays, Church, P.S. ....	68
Thursbie ..	103
Tile Cists, Interment in .....	111
Tirrell, Sir J., <i>see</i> Tyrell .....	8, 11
Tomb of Marney .....	29
—— Castle Hedingham .....	31
—— Rolls Chapel .....	27
—— of Wolsey .....	26
Tottenham, Prebend of .....	2
Tournaments, Devices adopted at .....	198
Tovi, founder of Religious House at Waltham .....	33
—— Athelstan, Son of .....	34
Tower .....	39
Tower Hill, New Abbey .....	91
—— Chapel in Abbey of S. Mary .....	168, 169
Towne .....	39
Townshend .....	39
Tremnailes .....	91
Trental, Bequest for .....	81
Turner .....	39
Turnour .....	97
Twysell .....	59
Tyrell Family .....	75, 93, 175
—— Inaccuracies in Morant's Account .....	79, 177, 179
—— Monuments destroyed .....	77
—— Wills of .....	78, 175
—— Sir T. ....	8, 11, 174
—— Will .....	78, 90
—— Lady Alice, Monument .....	78, 79
—— Sir W., Will .....	85
—— Sir R. ..	92
—— Mary....	93

	PAGE
<b>Tyrell, Lady Beatrice, Will</b> .....	92
——— Sir Robert, Will of.....	175
——— John, Will of .....	87, 177
——— Sir John .....	92, 179
——— Sir H. ....	177
——— Sir W. ....	178
——— Sir J. ..	181
——— Lady Anne, Will .....	179
——— Badge, by H. W. King .....	198
——— of Gipping, Etching of Badge, Standard and Arms .....	201
——— Motto .....	202, 203
U.	
Unicorn, Horn of .....	179, 198
Uphall, Roman Entrenchment .....	112
Upholsterers' Company, Arms .....	182
Upminster .....	35
Urn Burial, Roman .....	111
Urswick, D. ....	97
Urswyck, Sir F. ....	84
——— Effigies, Dagenham .....	84
V.	
Vandover (Strangman Pedigree) .....	97
Vassal .....	73
Veley, A. C., The Shakspeares of Essex.....	64
Venables .....	9
Vere, John de, Earl of Oxford .....	168
——— Monument at Castle Hedingham .....	3, 31
Vestment, Ecclesiastical .....	81
——— Bequest of .....	169, 172
Via Crucis .....	172
Vincent, Windsor Herald .....	96
Virgin Mary, Assumption of .....	187
W.	
Wade .....	39
Wake, Manors ..	34, 35
——— Knot .....	200
Wakering, Little .....	192
——— Sir Thomas .....	172
Waldegrave, Dame Elizabeth .....	172
Waldo, De .....	35
Walker .....	39
Walsingham .....	108
Waltham, Religious House Founded by Tovi .....	33
——— Cross transferred from Montacute .....	33
——— Visit of Harold.....	33
——— Church re-built and endowed by Harold .....	33
——— Charter and endowment of Edward the Confessor .....	34
——— Manerium .....	35



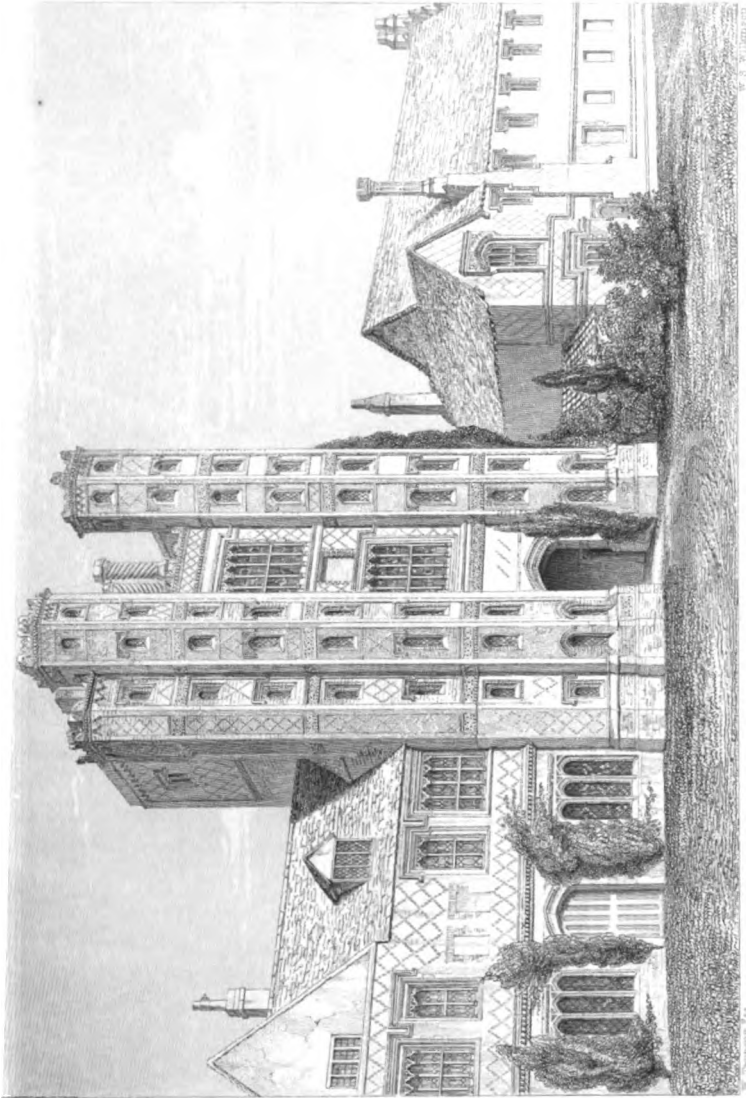
	PAGE
Waltham Abbey Church, Letter of Sir H. Ellis, in illustration of early history	33
———— Reconstructed and endowed by Henry II.	34
———— Revenue	35
———— (Little) Church	99, 173
Walton	39
War cry	201
Ward	39
Wardon's Hall	30
Warner	39
Wardship, practises relating to	57
Warlo Church	81
Warley	195
—— Little, Tyrell family	76, 92, 93
—— Church, Bequest to	93
Warr, De la, Badge	199
Watson	39
Waynflete, Bishop Wint	84
Wearing Apparel, inventory of	59
—— Bequest of	59, 173, 182
Webb	39
Wedington	171
Weedon, Sir Booth de	81
Wentworth, Lord	191, 194
—— Family	194
West	39
Westminster Abbey, Copes	81
—— Chapel, Hen. VII.	18
—— Style of	28
Weston	39
Wheeler	39
Whetnall	101
White	39
—— R.	90
Whitehall Gateway	26
Whiting	39
Willcox	39
Willingale Doe	30
Willis	39
Willoughby, Sir W.	81
Wills (Ancient), by H. W. King	53, 64, 167
—— Doctors Commons	54
—— of Essex Families	54
Windsor	34, 38
—— Chapel of St. George	28
Wingfield, J.	103, 197
—— W.	173
Wiseman	101, 102, 167
Witham Church, Vestment for	173
Withersfield, in New England	41

	PAGE
Witsand, Baldwin de	2
Wivenhoe	175
——— Church, Bequest to	176
Wolsey, Cardinal,	7
——— Battle of Spurs	14
——— Blackmore Priory	55
——— Palaces	18
——— Tomb	26
Wonnfrith, Ingatt att	83
Wood	39
——— Easter Sepulchre of	80
——— Tombs and Effigies in	80
Woodknife	59
Woodstock, John of, Badge	199
Wormelaya	35
Wrangle, Manerium de	36
Wright	39
Wudeford	35, 39
Wyott, Will of F.	68, 69
Wyborne	99
Wyngfield, W.	177
Wyvenhoe, <i>see</i> Wivenhoe	175
Y.	
Yngoe	97, 103
Yong	174
Yorkshire, Rebellion in	13

END OF VOL. III.







# TRANSACTIONS

OF

## The Essex Archaeological Society.

---

### PEDIGREE OF MARNEY.

#### 1. *The English Pedigree.*

BERRY'S pedigree is on the whole the best and clearest. Newcourt's answers its purpose, which is to show who presented to the Layer Marney Rectory. In the Harleian MSS. (British Museum, 1432 and 1541) are two fragmentary portions of Marney pedigree, which, though interesting in themselves, afford little additional light. Copies of all four are annexed. (Appendix A.)

The apparent discrepancy between the pedigrees of Newcourt and Berry may easily be reconciled. Sir William Marney, Sheriff of Essex, had two sons, Thomas and John. Thomas had no heirs male, and therefore the said Sir William was ultimately succeeded by John. John was the father of Henry, first Lord Marney. Take this clue and all comes out clear. There is also a Marney pedigree given by Lipscombe ("Buckinghamshire," i. 295), to show the alliance with the families of Burghersh, Chaucer, Hampden, &c.

But, besides what can strictly be called genealogy, one finds in old MSS., and in old books too, incidental notices of the Marney race, which, being scattered here and there, it seemed very desirable to bring together. I therefore annex them arranged chronologically, or, at any rate, so far as possible, in order. (B.)

Dugdale says in his "Baronage," ii. 301, "The first mention I find of the family is in 2 E iii." But you will see that there is much earlier mention of the Marneys. The

earliest I have found is that of Hugo de Marini, or Marney, who had the Prebend of Tottenhall, in the Church of St. Paul's, London, and was Dean of that Church from about 1160 to 1181. This brings us back to Hen. II. William de Marney, also, held a Knight's fee under Henry de Essex, in 1166.

Under Rich. I. we find Werry de Marinis excused by a writ from paying scutage.

William de Mareny had to pay a fine of twenty marks to King Hen. III. for having married a lady who was the King's ward.

William de Maryni, Knight, was one of the sureties to the same King for the debts, if any, of Baldwin de Witsand, deceased.

Agnes, widow of William, pays half a mark to the King.

Another (?) William de Marny is presented anno 2 Ed. I. for that, to the damage of his neighbours, he had appropriated to his own use two acres of the King's highway in Leyr Marney.

William de Marny, by payment of  $x^{\text{lib}}$  obtained license for granting to a laic a tenure in Leirmarny, with the advowson of the Church there. This was an. 4 Ed. III.

Sir Robert de Marney, at a later period, was Patron of South Ockendon Rectory. This was only for seven years; yet during that short period there were no less than four vacancies, and he four times exercised the right of presentation, namely, in 1391, in 1393, in 1397, and in 1398. ("Newcourt," ii. 447-8.)

Under Hen. V. we find traces of what appears to be a Norman branch of the Marini family (Marigny) in France.

A portion of one MS., in a very crabbed hand, from which I extract a few notices of the Marneys, is headed in the margin, "Evidences of Layer Marney and Britton." It seems to have been a rough abstract of various old deeds and conveyances, made by some learned lawyer about temp. Hen. VII. or Hen. VIII., probably for his own use, for, badly as they wrote in those days, he could hardly have made it for any one's besides.

It appears from Burke's "Roll of Battle Abbey" (pp. 5, 10, and 12) that the name of Marny stands amongst those who came over with William the Conqueror, in three of the published rolls, viz., Holinshed's, Duchesne's, and one

of Leland's; but I find nothing in "Domesday Book" to show that any Marney received a grant of lands, either in Laver Marney or elsewhere in England, at the time of the general distribution made by the Conqueror. Within a century of that period, however, as already mentioned, we find Muilman, Morant, and Banks in his "Dormant and Extinct Baronage," uniting their testimony that W. de Marney held a Knight's fee under Henry de Essex (1166); and from that time forth we find various notices of the Marneys and their holdings up to Hen. VIII. The prosperity of the Marney family culminated in this last reign, when Sir Henry Marney, already K.G. and a Privy Councillor, was created Baron Marney (1523); but he did not outlive the year, and his son and heir, John Lord Marney, dying without male issue in 1525, the whole of the splendid Marney property, not only in Essex, but in other counties, reverted to the Crown, the family estate excepted.

I copy three old MS. records of Henry Lord Marney's creation when he was made a Peer. One fixes the creation at "Richemonde," another at "Hampton Courte." This may be reconciled; for, the two places being only about four miles distant, it is very possible that the essential part of the ceremony may have been performed at one, and the normal concomitants, such as heraldic proclamation, feasting, dancing, and largess, at the other. The second MS. memorandum, though short, contains an important clause, "S' H. Marney create Lord Marney.....for *hym & hys heyre males.*" To Lord John there were no "heyre males," and the peerage became extinct (C). According to "Muilman" (D) the "noble family of Marney" enjoyed "the capital manor of Laver Marney" for about three centuries and a half (p. 39); perhaps we might say for 365 years, or nearly.

As "Domesday Book" records no Marney as a holder, either in capite or in dominio, of English acres under the Conqueror, how and when did this knightly house first become established in our soil?

It is well known that our first Kings after the Conquest, in order to strengthen their position, invited over their continental friends, whom they received and encouraged as upholders of their power. (Turner, "Hist. of Eng.," iv. 161, 211, 425, 437.) It is very possible that the founders of



the English house of Marney came over in that character, and were enriched, like others, by grants of land. The great proprietors, conscious of insecurity in their new possessions, adopted the same policy as their Kings. "After the death of Waltheof," says Lingard, "every earl, and every powerful vassal of the crown, was a Norman. Each of these, to guard against the disaffection of the natives, naturally surrounded himself with foreigners, who alone were the objects of his favour and patronage; and thus almost all, who aspired to the rank of gentlemen, all who possessed either wealth or authority, were Normans." (Lingard, i., 468.) If, as seems probable, the Marneys were of Norman origin, they may in this manner have acquired their earliest holdings. After the first donations under William the Conqueror, new grants were continually made to new comers.

## 2. *The Norman Pedigree.*

But who were the Norman progenitors of the Marneys? Of course, with our actual amount of information, all that can be offered upon this question must be taken as conjectural; but, after some search in French genealogies, I am on the whole disposed to give preference to the Norman family of *Marigni*. Annexed (E) is the pedigree of the Norman Marignis, principally deduced from the "Dictionnaire Généalogique." Marney is spelt in old English documents *Marini*, *Mareni*, *Maregni*, &c.; and it is observable that in one instance, as if wishing to be correct, an old writer, already referred to, has *struck out with his pen* the more modern name "*Marney*" and substituted "*Mareni*," thus:—

Robtus de ~~Marney~~ Mareni

Add. MS., 5937, fo. 104 over.

just as in another place he had struck out *Greene* and substituted the still older spelling *Grene*.

Marigny, a town of Normandy, afforded a title to the Norman family of Marigni. It will be seen, by the pedigree sent herewith, that Engueran de Portier married Maude, widow of Richard, who was "Seigneur DE LEGER." Now, neither in Expilly, nor in Valesius, nor in the great Dictionary of Martiniere, nor in any other French authority,

can I find any such name of a *French* place as Leger, giving title, or not giving title to a French family; and your Layer, amongst other modes of spelling, is written in old documents LEGERA (Legera Marney).

Add. MS., 5937, fo. 104 over.

On these facts, may we not be permitted to found a conjecture—of course, *only* a conjecture? Richard, Seigneur de *Leger*, whose widow Engueran le Portier married, had been already in England, and there, as a Norman, by grants from the Norman race then dominant, had acquired lands at *Legera*, in Essex, and to *this* cause owed his title as “Seigneur de *Leger*.” The son of the second marriage, Seigneur de Leger, in his turn, *in virtue of the Essex property*, took also from his *Norman* lordship the title of “Seigneur de Marigni;” and thus began the connexion between the names of Layer and of Marney.

After the marriage of Roger de Tay with Edith de la Haye, the names of the three Lords of Layer were Tay, Breton, and Marney. I have transcribed an old MS. memorandum in which all these three names appear together:—

Confirmatio fact. Henrico Stamp & Margt. ux. eius, &c. test<sup>m</sup> Johē Marney, milit. Robt. de Teye, Johē Bretoun. Armigs anno 3 Edw. 4<sup>th</sup>.

“Confirmation made to Henry Stamp and Margaret his wife. Witnesses, John *Marney*, K<sup>t</sup>; Robert *de Teye*; John *Breton*, Esq<sup>r</sup>. 3 Ed. IV.”

Derivation of *Layer*.—Morant proposes certain derivations of Layer, or rather cites them with an appearance of distrust (i. 405). I would suggest that the old spelling of Layer, *e.g.* Legra and Legera, points apparently to the ancient Teutonic word Lager, which was either a place of human resort, such as the retreats of the old Germans in their forests, or “cubile ferarum,” including, no doubt, the hart and wild boar, as well as the otter, fox, badger, and wolf, and so affording a hunting ground. We are not, however, compelled to take this latter meaning of Lager, to the exclusion of the former. Kelham, in his “Domesday Book illustrated,” points out the true reason why, in the original division of the counties into hundreds, some hundreds are so much *less in extent* than others:—The

division was not made by extent, but by population. Winstree, then, being a very *small* hundred, so small that it is sometimes called a half-hundred by mistake, may be presumed to have been, when constituted, proportionately *populous*; and the term Lager, as applied to the district now comprising the three Layers, may have been due to population, just as probably as to game.

*Henry, the First Lord Marney.*

Lord Henry Marney, numerous and splendid as were the honours which he acquired, started in life as plain *Henry Marney, Esquire*, and belonged to a class described by Henry VIII. as "scant well borne gentlemen, of no great lands." He inherited the paternal property; but this probably in the King's eyes was "scant," compared with the large holdings of some noblemen in those days, and with the noble domains and broad acres afterwards conferred on Henry Marney by the King himself, on the Duke of Buckingham's forfeiture. (F.)

Henry Marney stands recorded amongst "English worthies," and amongst the "noted Sheriffs" of Essex; but his first entrance on the path of *Court advancement* appears to have been when he assumed some office in the household of Margaret, Countess of Richmond, mother of Henry VII. That he discharged with credit the duties of this office is apparent from the fact that the Countess appointed him one of her *executors* (G); and the early partiality with which he was viewed by Prince Henry, afterwards Henry VIII., is evinced by the youth's request to his father, Henry VII., that Henry Marney might be made a Privy Councillor. The appointment was repeated by Henry VIII. himself when he succeeded to the throne; and, both before and after, the favourite was employed by his patron on various confidential services (H). The following is a list of honours and appointments conferred on Henry Marney:—

1. Previous to the accession of Henry VIII.:—

Sheriff of Essex.  
 Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster.  
 Officer of the Countess of Richmond's household.  
 Privy Councillor to Henry VII.

## 2. After the accession of Henry VIII. :—

Privy Councillor to Henry VIII. (a distinct appointment).  
 Knight of the Garter.  
 Lord Privy Seal.  
 Captain of the Body Guard.  
 Baron, by title of Lord Marney.

Henry Marney served frequently as a soldier in the civil contests under Henry VII. Under Henry VIII. he served repeatedly in France, especially in the campaign including the "Battle of Spurs," in which the King was present in person (I).

He seems to have had a glorious quarrel with Cardinal Wolsey (K). This was before he was made a Baron. One would like to know how he contrived to survive the Cardinal's wrath in those ticklish times, and to win the peerage in spite of hostile influences.

When, after his creation, he was about to start for his last campaign in France, he appears to have felt a pre-sentiment that he had not long to live. He returned, however, in safety to England, but died in London within the twelvemonth at his own house (L).

In Lloyd's "State Worthies," ed. 1766, vol. i., p. 159, appears the following character of Sir Henry Marney. The author is disposed to be eulogistic, but I think the sketch will be found interesting in connexion with our present subject :—

*"Observations on the Life of Sir Henry Marny.*

"Sir Henry Marny was one of young Henry's first council, who loved his person well, and his prosperity better; and impartially advised him for his good, and modestly contested with him against his harm; that council that was hand as well as head, and could perform as well as advise; this was the searching judgement that discovered Buonviso the Lucchese his letters to the French King, betraying our designs as soon as thought on, and instructing him for prevention, before our King was ready for the attempt. Industry and thrift over-rules princes: this personage had no time to transcribe intelligence, but what he borrowed from his sleep; nor money to buy it, but what he saved out of his allowance: yet he understood moer than any one prince of Europe, and was more consulted than any one statesman. His judgment was much valued, his integrity more; ever offering what was solidly safe, rather than what was superficially plausible: as one who was a stranger to the wisdom of the latter age (as Sir Francis Bacon describes it), which is rather *fino deliveries* and shifts from inconveniences, than solid and grounded courses for advantage. His foresight was large, and his spirit

larger: he considered all circumstances that occurred to him; judged what he considered, and spoke what he judged—with that resolution as to his opinion, that argued he understood the matter in question, with that modesty as to his superiours, that shewed he understood himself. He would say that he that could not with the cameleon change colour with the aire he lived in, must with the cameleon live only upon aire."

(A fuller account of Henry Lord Marney may be seen in "Remarks and Characters," p. 23.)

---



---

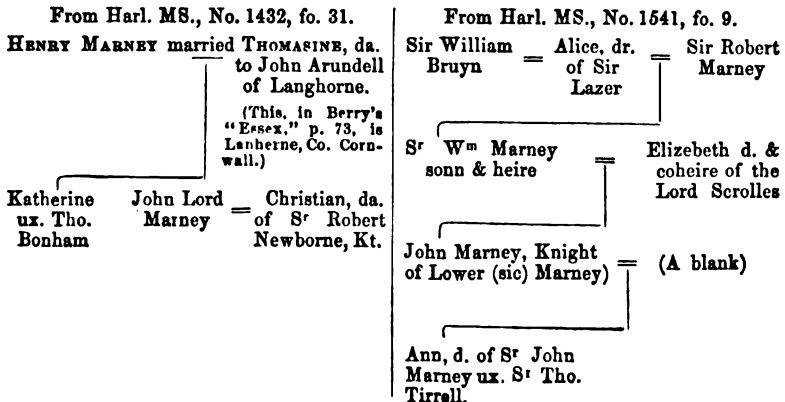
## APPENDIX.

---

### PEDIGREES OF MARNEY.

(A)

*Portions from MSS.*



*Pedigree from Newcourt, ii., 377.*

William de Marney was Lord of L. Marney and Patron of the Rectory and Par. Ch. 3 Edw. iii.

To this, Wm. succeeded [not stated if son] and was patron of the Chantry in 1336, 11 Ed. iii.

[Dugdale says, another William succeeded, Sheriff of Essex and Herts, 3 Henry iv. 1401.]

Robert de Marney, Kt., styled also *nobilis*, was patron 1365, and presented also, in 1398, 22 Ric. ii.

[This Robert, according to Newcourt, was father of the last-named Wm.]

William [the Sheriff as aforesaid].

Sir Thomas, &c., Marney, Kt.

Margaret, dr. & heir.

Her uncle, John Marney, Esq., presented in 1442.

Henry Marney, Esq., his son & heir; and presented 1488. [This, Baron Marney.]

John Lord Marney.

*Pedigree from Berry, Essex, p. 73.*

Sir William Marney, Knight.

John Marney = Avice, d. of Ralph Gernon.

Sir William Marney, of Layer Marney, Co. Essex, temp. Ed. iii.

Katherine, d. & coheir of Venables.

Sir Robert Marney, Knt. = Alice, daur. of Rich<sup>d</sup> Layer, of Suffolk.

Sir Wm. Marney, of Layer Marney. Ass<sup>d</sup> High Sheriff for Essex and Herts, 1402, ob. 2 H. v.

Elizabeth, d. and coheir of Sir Rich<sup>d</sup> Sergiaux, Kt.

Sir John Marney, of Layer Marney, Kt.

= Joan, d. of John Throgmorton, of Co. Gloucester.

Sir Henry Marney, Privy Councillor to Hen. vii. & viii., K.G., created Lord Marney 14 Hen. viii. Ob. 24 May, 1523, bur<sup>d</sup> at Layer Marney.

= Thomazin, d. of Sir John Arundel, of Lanhorne, Co. Cornwall.

Lord John Marney, son and heir [of Lord Henry] died 27 Apr., 1525. Catherine, only d. of Lord Henry, & sister of Lord John, married Thomas Bonham, Esq.

= \*Catherine, d. and heir of Sir Roger Newburgh.

Catherine = Lord Poyninga died S.P.

Elizabeth = Thomas Lord Howard, Vis<sup>c</sup> Bindon.

\* Concerning this lady, wife of Lord John Marney, Leland appears to make a mistake, marrying her to Lord Henry. "The laste of that name [Newborow, in Berry Newburgh] whos daughter and Heyre was married to Syr Henry Marney, dyid in Esteax or Southfolk, and ther was byrtyed." *Itin.* 2nd ed. iii. 63.

## (B)

MENTION OF THE NAME OF MARNEY, MARINI, &c., IN  
VARIOUS MANUSCRIPTS AND PRINTED BOOKS.*Hen. II. Accession 1154.*

Hugo de Marini, or Marny, had the prebend of Totenhall, in the Church of St. Paul's, London, and was Dean of that Church from about 1160 to 1181. Newcourt, i. 34,213. Wright ("Essex") ii. 726, note. Le Neve.

William de Marney, about 1166, held a knight's fee under Henry of Essex. Morant, i. 406. "The Marney family held the chief of them [the lands of Layer Marney] as early as the reign of King Henry ii., under Henry de Essex." "Muilman," ("Essex") v. 413. See also Banks, ("Dorm. and Ext. Baronage") iii. 509.

*Rich. I. 1189.*

Werry de Marinis excused by a writ of Rich. i., 1194, from paying scutage. Morant, i. 406; and Salmon, 447, 2.

*John. 1199.*

"We see de Marinis possessed of the Grand Manor, before the Interdict." Salmon, 447, 1.

*Hen. III. 1216.*

"Essex." } Willielmus de Mareny finem fecit cum [Rege] per viginti  
} marcas pro eo quod duxit in uxorem sine licentia Regis  
Agnem quæ fuit uxor Thomæ de Canvillo, quæ fuit de donatione Regis.  
Et mandatum est Vicecomiti Essex et Hertf. quod prædictum Willielmum  
occasione prædicta in nullo occasionet [charge] vel molestet, et de terra  
ipsorum Willielmi et Agnis et catallis eorum quæ occasione prædicta  
in manum Regis capit ei plenam seisinam habere faciat. T. R. [Terminus  
Regis] apud Ottindon. xxij. die. Jul." "Roberts, "Excerpta e Rotulis  
Finium," i. 309. (The above, 20 Hen. iii. A. D. 1236.)

"Essex" } Agnes quæ fuit uxor Willielmi de Mariny dat Regi dimidium  
} marcæ pro uno brevi ad terminum. Et mandatum est Vice-  
comiti Essexiæ quod capiat securitatem. Terminis Regis apud Westm. xj.  
die. Maii." Roberts, ii. 77 (34 Hen. iii., A. D. 1250.)

"Essex." } Will' de Marigny et Agnes uxor ejus dant Regi duas  
} marcas pro una ass<sup>a</sup> no. dis. cap. coram Henr de Bathon.  
Et mand est Viç Essex, &c." Ib. ii. 221. (40 Hen. iii., A. D. 1256.)

"Executores Baldewini de Witsand' fecerunt nobis securitatem per  
Ricardum de Culeworth et Willielmum de Maryni milites de coñ. Essex  
de debitis R reddendis si que dictus Bald. R debebat die quo obiit."  
Ib. ii. 401. (A. D. 1263, 47 Hen. iii.)

*Ed. I. 1272.**"Dimid. Hundr' m de Wensetr'*

"De p' prestur [Perprestura, an encroachment or trespass]. "Dicunt  
quod Wills de Marny temp guerre fec' quamd' p' prestur' in regali via in  
vill de Leyr Marny ad quantitatem ij<sup>ac'</sup> ac' ad dampnu vicinor nesciunt  
q' war'." "Rotuli Hundredorum," i, 157.

(It is to be observed that Edw. i., returning from the Holy Land, found great abuses, from encroachments on the King's rights, oppression of the people by nobility, gentry, sheriffs, &c. Therefore the King, anno regni ii, Oct. 11, appointed a Special Commission; whence resulted the "Hundred Rolls," or "Rotuli Hundredorum," from which the above is an extract. See "Rot. Hund.," i, 9—11.)

Anno 35 Edw. i. "Rob<sup>m</sup> de Marney." Addit. MS. 5937, British Museum, (the same which contains the "Evidences of Layer Marney) fo. 105. "Test. apud Messing anno 35 Edw. pmi. Thomas Baynard, Robtus de Marney, Ric. de Teye."

---

*Ed. II.* 1307.

"3 Edw. ii. apud Messing. . . . W<sup>m</sup> de Marney." Ib.

"In 12 Ed. ii. William de Marney, who founded the College here." Salmon, 447.2.

---

*Ed. III.* 1327.

Witness at Layer Breton, 2 Ed. iii. "W<sup>m</sup> de Marney." *Addit. MS.* 5937, as before.

"Will de Marney finem fecit p decem libr' p lic' dandi laic' feod' in Leirmarney, et advocoem [advowson] ecclie ejusdem ville ad manum mortuam." "Rot. Orig." ii. p. 46, col. 2. (4 Ed. iii.)

*First* mention found by Dugdale. "The first mention I find of the family, is in 9 Ed. 3. William de Marney, about that time obtaining a charter for Free-Warren, in all his demesn lands at Leyre-Marney, in Com. Essex." "Baronage," ii. 301.

Anno 9 Ed. iii. "Rex confirmavit Robert de Marney consanguineo et hæredi Willi de Marney in feodo parcum suum de Leyre infra metas forestæ de Essex' concess' Willo per Henricum tertium." "Calendarium Rotulorum Patentium," p. 122, col. 2.

---

*Hen. IV.* 1399.

24 (?) Hen. iv. "Johes Marney Miles." Ad. MS. 5937, fo. 105. [There must be some mistake, as Henry iv. did not reign so many as 24 years. Qy. 14 Henry iv.]

---

*Hen. V.* 1413.

Traces of the *foreign* family of Marigny in *Normandy*. Hen. v. in 1417 grants safe conduct to Fluri Marrigny, Gillet de Marigny, and others "in ducatu R normann a psens existentes." Hardy, "Rotuli Normanniæ," i. 178.

---

*Hen. VI.* 1422.

28 Henry vi. John Marney, Knight. Ad. MS. 5937, fo. 105 over.

---

*Ed. IV.* 1461.

Sir Thomas Tyrell, who died 1476, married Emma, daur of John Marney, of Layer Marney, co. Essex, Esq. See Berry's "County Genealogies," Essex, p. 58. (In the genealogy from Harl. MS., 1541, given above, it is Ann, d. of S<sup>r</sup> John Marney.)

3 Ed. iv., "John Marney, miles." Ad. MS. as before



*Hen. VII.* 1485.

"Henricus Walliæ princeps" protests against his marriage with "Katharina Hispaniarum Regis filia." June 27, 1505. Witnesses of the protest:—

"Giles Daubney, C. Somerset.  
Thomas Rowthale.  
Nicholas West.  
Henry Marney."

Burnet, "Hist. of the Reformation," Ed. 1829, vol. i., pt. 2, pp. 17, 18.

*Hen. VIII.* 1509.

Some particulars of the large property held by Sir Henry Marney, and the large grants made to him by King Henry viii., may be seen in Lipscombe's "Buckinghamshire," i. 457, iv. 72, ii. 558, i. 152.

The Order in Council which I found at the British Museum in manuscript (Add. MSS. 6214, fo. 3) is "for making of burgesses of Reding," and bears date 26 Oct. 2nd year of K. Henry viii. It has the autograph signatures of

T. Surrey,  
Ric. Wynton, C. Somerset,  
Harry Marney,  
T. Englefield.

"Ric. Wynton" is said in an annexed note by a more recent writer to be "Fox."

## (C)

(1) "Sir Henrye Marney made barron Marney. 12 Ap. 1523, Anno xiiij. Hen. viii." Add. MSS. 6113, fo. 127.

(2) "S<sup>r</sup> Henry Marney create Lorde Marney at Hampton Courte the xiiijth yere of his Reign [Hen. viii.'s] 9 Aplis for hym & his heyre males." Ib. fo. 192 over.

(Obs. The MS. from which this was copied appears to have been evidently written in the *reign* of Hen. viii. For the list of creations from which it is taken is headed "The names of the noble men created in the tyme of o<sup>r</sup> Souverain lorde King Henry the viij<sup>th</sup>, *the Kings Royall ma<sup>tes</sup> that now ys.*")

(3) "Lord Marney.

"The xij day of Aprill in the yere of our Lord A.m. v<sup>r</sup> xxiiij. in the xiiij. yere of Kinge Henrye theight was S<sup>r</sup> Henrye Marney created barron Marney at the King's place at Richemonte, being ledde by the Lord Roos and the Lord Fitzwater, and the Lorde Montyoye bering the robe having ij. *barres of lectues*. Don in order as before in other ys more at large declarid. And thofficers who were there hadd there fees.

Mr. Garter, Kinge at Armes  
Rychemont }  
Lancaster } Heralds.  
Rudgcrosse }  
Rudgdragon } "psyvunts"

Ib. fo. 127.

(D)

"The capital Manor here is that of Layer-Marney, so denominated from the noble family of Marney, who enjoyed it from the reign of King Henry ii. to that of King Henry viii." "Muilman," v. 414.

(E)

*Marigny of Normandy.*

Pedigree, chiefly taken from the "Dictionnaire Généalogique," vol. iii.

*Portier de Marigni.*

Richard, Seigneur = Mahaud = Engueran le Portier, (2nd  
DE LÈGÈR, first (Maude) husband of Maude,) vivait  
husband of Maude en 1150

Engueran ii. du nom, Seigneur de MARIGNI, qui prit le nom de sa mere, et vivoit en 1240.

First Wife = Philippe de Marigni = Second Wife

Engueran de Marigni iii. du nom, made Count de Longueville in 1301. Brought to the gallows by the Count de Valois, and his innocence afterwards established.

Two Ecclesiastics.

(F)

In answer to the complaint of "the Rebylles in Yorkeshire" that K. Henry viii. had not so many "noble Counsaillours" as at the beginning of his reign, the King writes, "Who were then Counsaillors I well remember, and yet of the Temporaltie I note none but 2, worthie calling noble. . . . Others, as the Lorde Marney, and Darcey, but scant well borne gentlemen; and yet of no grete landes, till they were promoted by Us, and so made Knightes, and Lordes." "State Papers," Henry viii., vol. i., p. 507.

(G)

Among the "Noted Sheriffs" of Essex is mentioned Henry Marney, Esq. "Henry Marny, Ar. was ('tis supposed) servant, afterwards executor to the King's mother, Marg. Countess of Richmond. He was Knighted, made Chanc. of the Dutchy," &c. "Eng. Worthies" (called also "Anglorum Speculum"), p. 199.

In the will of "Margarete Countes of Richmond and Derby, moder to the most excellent Prince King Henry the VII.," Henry Marney is expressly styled "Chauncellar of the Duchie of Lancaster." Nichols, "Collection of Wills," p. 356.

## (H)

Henry vii., Oct., 1501. At the reception of Katherine [of Arragon], when she was about to become wife of Arthur, Prince of Wales, [son of H. vii.,] Sir Henry Marney was one of those appointed to be in attendance near the Tower Gate, "with my Lorde of Yorke, the King's second son," to receive the said Princess on her arrival, when "she shall be set on land." "Miscel. State Papers," 1501 to 1726. Vol. i., pp. 5, 6.

"Sir Henry Marney... was the King's [H. the Eighth's] first favourite, and was chosen a Privy Counsellor in the late reign at his request." He is "distinguished in history" "as one of the most magnificent and gallant courtiers of the time." Lodge, "Illustrations," vol. i., p. 18 (note by the author).

"John had issue *Henry*; who, being a person of great wisdom, gravity; and of singular fidelity to that prudent Prince King Henry the 7th, was made choice of for one of his Privy-Council, in the first year of his reign..... And upon the death of King Henry the seventh, being chosen one of the Privy-Council to King Henry the 8th, was shortly after install'd Knight of the most noble order of the Garter. From which King he had such high esteem, as that he was made Captain of his Guard; and in 13 Hen. 8 procured a grant in special tail, of the Mannours of Little Brickhill," &c., "as also of the Burrough of Buckingham, then in the Crown by reason of the Duke's forfeiture. And in 14 Hen. 8 (4 Feb.) was made Keeper of the Privy-Seal: as also upon the ninth April following, advanced to the dignity of a Baron of this Realm, by the name of Lord Marney." Dugdale, "Baronage." Tome ii., p. 301.

N.B. The writ of Lord H. Marney's creation may be seen at length in Rymer's "Fœdera," 1523, feb. 26.

According to Miss Strickland ("Lives of Queens"), Lord Marney was sent with the Duke of Norfolk to reduce the household of the Princess Mary (afterwards Queen M.), vol. iii., p. 332.

"As he [the Duke of Buckingham] descended the Thames, and drew near the city, his barge was hailed and boarded by Sir Henry Marney, captain of the body-guard, and a company of yeomen of the guard, who attached him as a traitor in the King's name." "Pict. Hist. of Eng.," v. ii., p. 344. (Some particulars of this arrest, by "Sir Henry Marney," may also be seen in Grafton's "Chronicle," pp. 1044-5. In page 1045 the name is spelt *Marnay*.)

## (I)

Henry Marney "in 2 Hen. 7 fought stoutly for him against John Earl of Lincoln, and his adherents, in the Battel of Stoke, near Newark. He was also in the Battel at Black-Hethe, in 12 H. 7 against the Lord Audley and the Cornish-men, then in Rebellion."..... "After which [his creation by H. viii.] he accompanied Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, then General of the English forces sent into France; landing with him at Calais." Dugdale "Baronage." Tome ii., p. 301. (It was just before starting on this last military service that Lord H. Marney made his will, desiring to be buried at Layer Marney, *if he died in England*.)

In the campaign of 1513, headed by Hen. 8 in person, and including the victory called the "Battle of the Spurs," the paper entitled the "Order of the Army" gives successively "The Vauntgarde," "The

Myddwarde," and "The Rerewarde." At the head of the "Rerewarde" stands the name of "Sir Henry Marney." In the "Myddwarde" marched the King's Majesty, and in the "Vauntgarde" "Mr. Almoner" (Wolsey!) Lodge, vol i., p. 2.

N.B. The "Battle of the *Spurs*" is said to be so called on account of the extraordinary rapidity with which the chivalry of France galloped away, when they had lost the field. However that may be, the fight took place not far from the village of *Spours*.

Supposed to be two years after (1515), a paper entitled "Ordennee and Artillery, delyved by S<sup>r</sup> Sampson Norton, by vertue of the King's warrunts." Amongst other issues, "To S<sup>r</sup> Henry Mney, knyght, by i. warrunt, Bowes iiiii<sup>xxiii</sup>." (i.e. 94).

"Henry Marney" is named among those who joined Hen. vii. near "Nottingham." This appears to be recorded as a military service. Hardyng, "Chronicle," p. 555.

---

(K)

1516. "Thomas Alen to the Earl of Shrewsbury." (Alen signs himself "Yo<sup>r</sup> pst, Tho<sup>r</sup> Alen." "Her [at court] is gret snerling among dvse of them, yn so moche my Lorde Cardynall sayd unto S<sup>r</sup> Henry Marny that the same S<sup>r</sup> Henry had done more displeasure unto the Kyng's Gce, by the reason of his crueltie agenst the gret estates of this realme, then any man lyving." Lodge i. 18.

The same to the same, 1517. "My Lord, as far as I can her, y<sup>r</sup> Lordship is moche beholdeyn to my Lord Cardinall for his loving words, and that mvellously now a late daies, sens the vareans was betwix his Gce and S<sup>r</sup> Henry Mny." *Ib.*, p. 23.

---

(L)

According to Newcourt, Lord H. Marney died "at his house in S. Swithin's, London, May 24, 1523, 15 Hen. viii." ii. 378.

[The "badge" of Marney. "MARNEY. A wing erect and erased Argent." "Collect. Topog. et Geneal." iii. 68.] "Erased" means jagged at the bottom, as if forcibly torn off.

---

ARCHITECTURAL NOTES ON LAYER MARNEY  
HALL, ESSEX; AND ON THE PARISH CHURCH  
ADJOINING.

BY CHARLES FORSTER HAYWARD,

*Fellow and Honorary Secretary to the Royal Institute of British Architects.*

THE preceding account of the Marney family, and the references to the founders of these buildings, are so copious, that little is left for me to add on this point. Architecture, however, is so intimately connected with History, and requires for its proper study a sufficient knowledge of the events of the times and the actions of the individuals coeval with it, that nothing can be out of place in an Architectural description which throws light on the influences at work, or the individual characters which helped to mould the especial forms under consideration.

For be it remembered, all architectural forms have an origin—either in the exigencies of ordinary existence, viz., the necessity for shelter, light, and air;—the peculiarities of materials; the prevalence of taste, good or bad, as we choose to call it now; the influences of religion; the desire for magnificence or simplicity; the caprices of fashion, &c., and sometimes merely the fancies of individuals. Often, in the dim distance of centuries, we are at a loss to trace the reason for this or that form of structure; but as often we find that some peculiarity of construction or style of ornamentation is to be explained by, or itself illustrates, some local custom or form of expression.

There was as much reason among the ancient Babel builders for the use of sun-baked clay for bricks, and “slime” for mortar, as there was for the use of moulded bricks in a country like Essex, where stone is not found,

and for the use of chalk, where stone-lime is not easily procured, for mortar.

And there is the same exercise of common sense by us now when we use our own granites and marbles in building, as was shown by our mediæval forefathers, and by the Egyptians and Greeks, when they erected their noble edifices in porphyry, granite, marble, or other materials afforded by the locality.

Bearing this in mind, the reader will excuse my apparently wandering notes, and pardon me if, instead of immediately speaking of the buildings to which I particularly desire to draw attention, I mention other buildings or other circumstances which may illustrate them.

The history of Layer Marney Hall, as it now exists, is the history of a quarter of a century—from A.D. 1500 to 1525 exactly—for what has happened since may be summed up in very few words: simple neglect and natural decay.

To commence at the year 1500, when Henry VII. was king. We find that Sir Henry de Marney was in great favour at Court, being made one of the Privy Council. Probably he migrated to Calais in this year with the king, to escape the plague which was raging over here.

As a courtier, Sir Henry probably saw a great deal of those *low* tricks which were then practised in the exalted regions of *high* life, and by which so many fine estates were acquired and fortunes made; but we do not find that he himself was guilty of anything mean or low. On the other hand, he had the opportunity of meeting on equal terms with the greatest men of the time.

And let us recollect this was a noble age of energy and mental action—a period of *renaissance* for intellect, whether applied to literature or the arts; a time for the new birth of religious as well as secular learning; an age when kings disdained not to study hard, and were proud of publishing learned books. It was an age of greatness, and there occur to one's mind such names as Wolsey and Leo X., great and learned men; Erasmus, Luther, lights to brighten up any time; Columbus and Amerigo, names not forgotten even now; Bramante, Raffaele, Michael Angelo, never to be thought of without

It was probably for this service, as well as others, that in the following year Sir Henry Marney received his title of nobility.

Reverting to the architectural subject, the general group of the buildings will be seen from the plan forming one of the illustrations to this paper, to consist, at present, of a gateway facing south, some buildings to the west of the Gateway or "Tower," and an immense range of stable and other farm buildings with dormitories and other apartments over them now not quite easy to understand, on the eastern side.

To these must be added the Church, the N.E. angle of which is indicated on the plan, and which, being of a similar material and style of architecture, must be noticed as forming part of the general group.

That some of these buildings were intended to be considerably extended is shown by the "toothings" left in the brickwork on the north and east walls, and by certain foundations, and a sort of terrace or level parallel with the existing buildings in about the position shown by the dotted lines. These latter indications, it is but right to add, may be the foundations of some older house in which the family resided while the gateway and other parts of the new mansion was being erected.

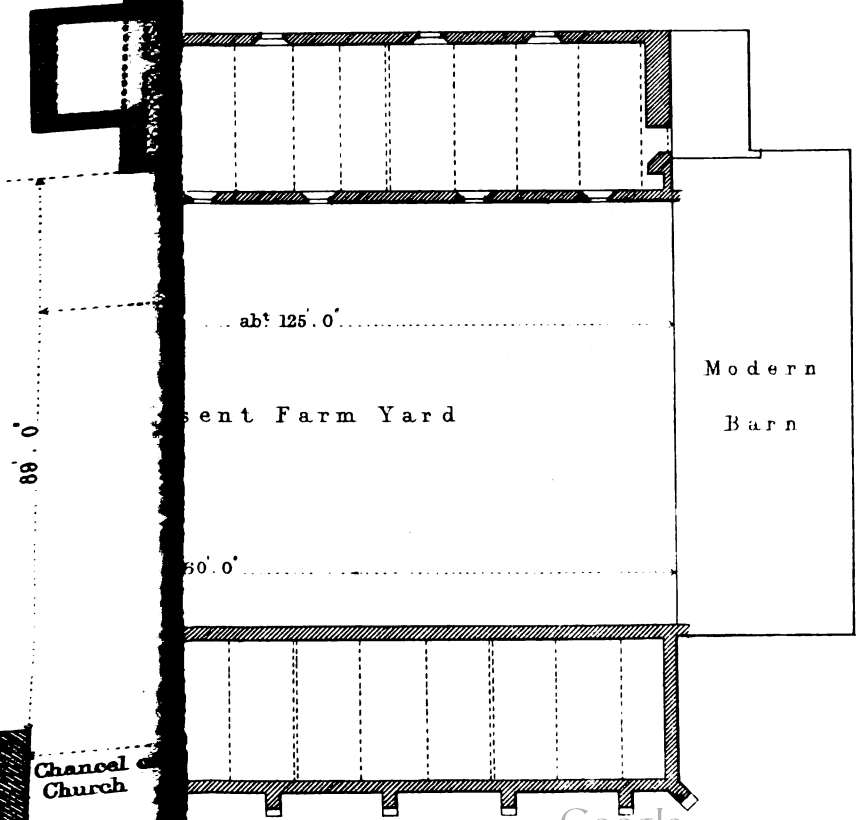
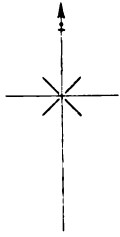
That the whole edifice never was completed, is proved distinctly by the toothings above referred to, which are simply the ordinary way of building walls which are intended to be connected with other walls, and can have no other object or meaning. Hence, all that is said in the county histories about the destruction of the place, must refer to some older buildings, probably the original Manor House.

The site seems well chosen, facing the south, on the brow of a small eminence partly artificial, commanding a view over what was probably, 300 years ago, marsh land, stretching away towards the sea, but which now shows as pleasant green fields, said to be remarkably fertile. The range of farm buildings formed a shelter from the east, while on the west of the gateway stretched the only wing of the residential buildings ever completed, for a distance of about 60 feet.

The gateway seems to have been intended to be central,

LAYER MARNEY HALL,  
NEAR COLCHESTER, ESSEX.

GENERAL PLAN.  
Shewing First Floor of Buildings.



89'. 0"

ab<sup>t</sup> 125'. 0"

Present Farm Yard

Modern  
Barn

50'. 0"

Chancel of  
Church

From a Drawing





or nearly so, with the court-yard inside; and opposite to it, on the north, was probably intended to be placed the hall, and chapel [if any], and larger apartments communicating with it. This court-yard, as suggested by the dotted lines on the plan, was probably about 100 feet square. Britton, Vol. I., speaks of this central court as measuring 104 feet 6 inches by 76 feet 4 inches; but why, I cannot understand, unless indications existed then which do not at this present time appear.

Judging from the plan of the part erected, a corridor, with windows towards the court, would have afforded access to the series of apartments which were to have had windows in the outer walls. This was a common way of arranging the rooms at this period, and it shows, amongst other things, the importance attached to the quadrangle, that here are some of the finest windows and doorways.

In the numerous examples of gateways and court-yards erected about this time, which will occur to the recollection of every one, may be observed the magnificence which such an arrangement gives to very simple buildings. How much more splendid, then, would have been the effect had such a noble gateway as this led into a court not inferior in character, especially when filled with the splendour of 16th century costume horses and equipages.

But this arrangement had another intention also, viz., security; although very little provision appears to have been made in this case, as in many others, for protection from without, this being an indication of the settled condition of this part of the country at this time.\*

The northern range of the out-buildings, which form in themselves three sides of a court as spacious as the one just described, was intended to be connected with the gateway; but the southern range, probably, terminated in a fine archway and gable, though it now shows only portions of the arch in a mutilated form. This latter building, about 160 feet long, has a number of remarkably fine buttresses on the south side, where the ground falls. From the examination of the trusses of the roof, the upper floor seems to have been divided into five apart-

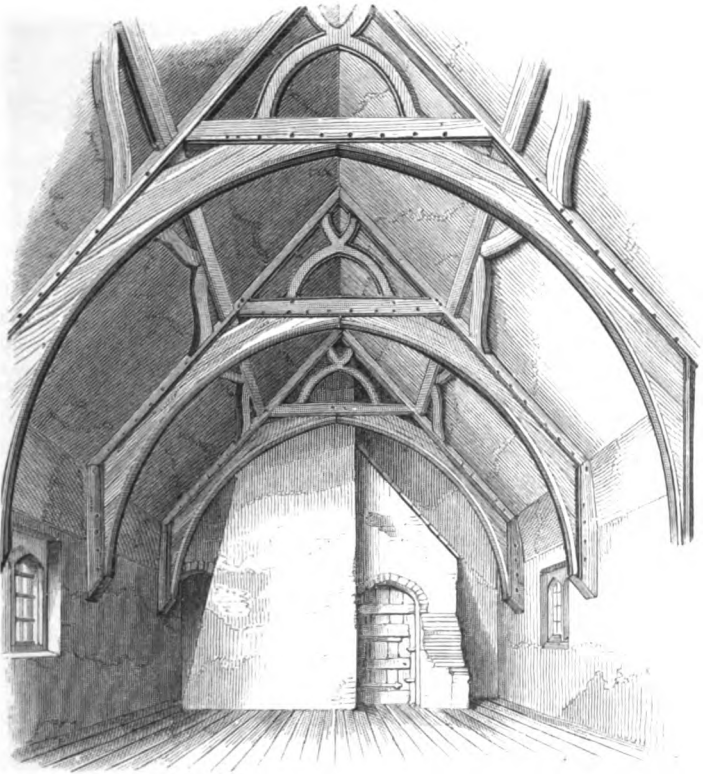
\* King Henry VII. granted a license to fortify New Hall, in Essex, with walls and towers; but Gosfield Hall, in the same reign, was built "in a measure to evade the laws, and has a large quadrangular court in the centre, and was as strong and well secured as many baronial castles."

ments, which, though now much altered, and used merely as lofts for hay and straw, still show the fine open timber roof, and windows looking into the yard. The arrangement of the lower floor is not so evident, but, probably, a little further observation would show the arrangement and object of many parts now obscure. It seems probable, however, that this was occupied as stabling necessary for such an establishment. The opposite, or northern, range of buildings, as will be seen by reference to the plan, is but 125 feet long, though of a similar character exactly, except that at the end nearest the gateway, a very picturesque residence is formed by projecting windows and fire places, and which is now in daily use almost unaltered. By an examination of the roofs, it is seen that the remainder of the upper part of this building was formed into two large apartments, with windows in both back and front walls—not opposite to each other, but alternating—and all glazed. At the end wall, towards the east, is a large fire place and chimney, forming, with a stepped gable, a fine termination to the roof, although a doorway in the wall shows a communication with apartments beyond. A view of this interesting example of an ancient dormitory, from Mr. Parker's "Domestic Architecture," is given in the accompanying plate, and there seems no doubt that this was the sleeping place of a large number of the retainers of Lord Marney.\* The floor below was occupied, probably as at present, by cattle, sheep, &c.

The third side of this farm yard was probably occupied, or intended to be, by a barn, but the existing one gives no idea of the grandeur which such an object would have assumed had it been built in a manner consistent with the other buildings.

Our sections and views will show some of the details; but we may explain, that all the windows and door-frames on the ground floor are built of hard purbeck stone. The windows had iron gratings and shutters, hung to the jambs by iron hooks, still remaining; the girders and joists of the floor were of the most massive description,

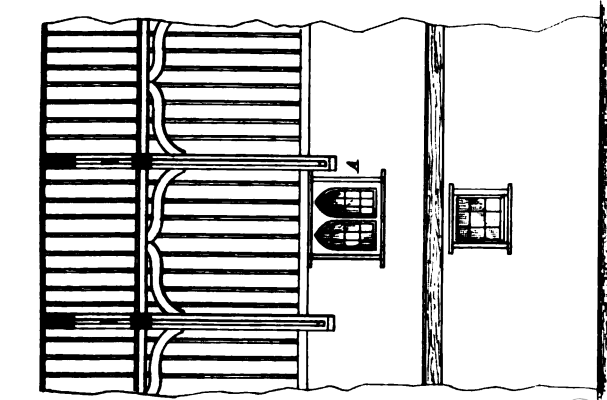
\* "There is reason to believe that in the larger houses and castles there was commonly a chamber at the top of the house, near the roof, which served for a dormitory, very much after the same fashion as in the monasteries, or the long room at Eton College. There is a room of this kind, called the dormitory, at Layer Marney, Essex."—"Domestic Architecture," Vol. III., part 1, p. 8.



**DORMITORY, LAYER MARNEY HALL.**

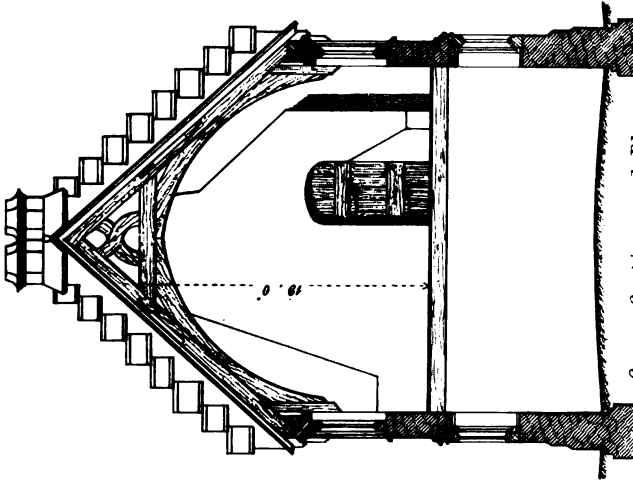


LAYER MARNEY HALL

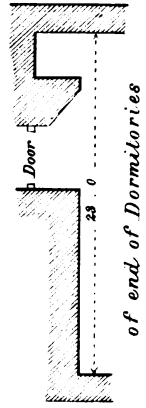


Plan at A

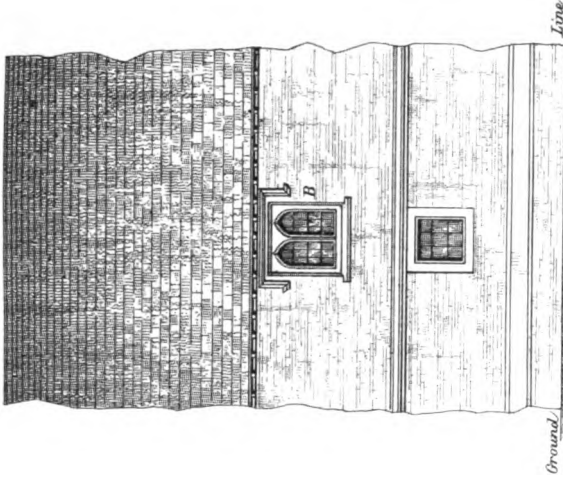
Interior Elevation  
of Dormitory Buildings.



Cross Section and Plan



of end of Dormitories



Plan at B

Exterior Elevation  
of Dormitory Buildings.

30 FEET

20

10

0

5

10



of oak or chesnut. The upper windows were built of moulded brick, of two lights under a moulded drip; the roof is of a design and character similar to our best church roofs, having arch principals and wind braces, &c. The walls generally, and in fact all the works, show a substantiality perfectly marvellous, when we recollect the pinched and miserable style of most modern work, but only consistent with what was done everywhere at the period we are speaking of.

What a magnificent model farm yard might be here, were modern science employed to add to these noble edifices, the great agricultural improvements of our day, with sufficient taste and feeling not to destroy or deform one particle of the ancient work.

The general *exterior* aspect of the buildings, as at present existing, is shown in the frontispiece; and the *interior* arrangements will be best understood by a reference to the plan and illustrations.

It will there be seen that the gateway consisted of a large obtusely-pointed or four-centred archway, closed by double folding gates, and flanked on either side by a projecting semi-octagonal tower, about 70 feet high, divided into 8 stories, and that these towers are again flanked, each by a semi-octagonal turret, one story less in height than the towers. Over the central gateway is a large mullioned window, of 5 lights, divided half way up by a transverse bar; and on the story above this, again, is a similar window, crowned by a parapet, at a level considerably lower than the flanking towers.

The range of buildings forming the western wing seem now very small, in comparison with the gateway, and have thus given such prominence to it that the common name for the Hall is Layer Marney "Tower," a word hardly applicable in this instance.

On each side of the entrance archway, the apartments which occupy the octagonal towers are lighted by windows in the external faces, forming a sort of bow window to each; these rooms are piled above each other, as has been said, for 8 stories. The upper one is accessible only from the staircase turret at the back, by crossing the roofs, and forms a sort of watch tower, from which very extensive views, stretching out far sea, can be obtained.



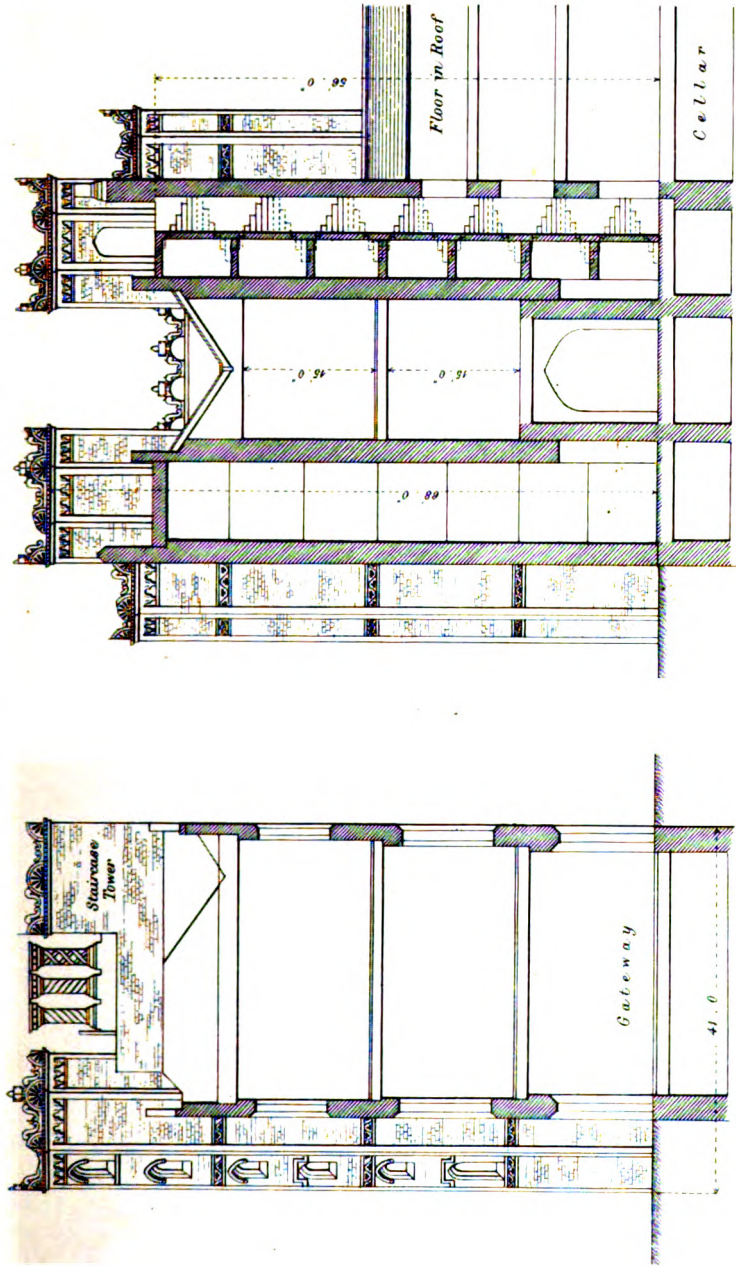
In one of the angles towards the inner court-yard a commodious octagonal staircase of oak, winding round a central newell, affords access to these rooms, and the larger apartments now to be mentioned, and also, though at a different level, to the western wing, which is now the residential part of these premises. This staircase itself is worthy of notice. The first apartment over the entrance archway, occupying the space from back to front, the whole width of the turrets, and the height of two of the side apartments, is worthy of great attention, as well as the one above it, exactly similar in size and proportion. Unfortunately (though this is convenient enough for our present purpose), both can now be seen at once; in fact, all is visible from floor to roof, owing to the decay of the floors and beams; which latter, however, still remain, propped up, sufficiently to show the once massive character of everything connected with the place. The wide open fire-place, with carved stone chimney-piece, still remains, ready to glow with the cheerful blaze once more; and even the oak linings of the window jambs partially exist, to attest the completeness of the work, and agree exactly with the panelled oak ceilings we shall have presently to mention. The windows themselves are very large, and of five lights, with "floriated" heads, but are of such a peculiar character that we shall have to speak of them separately.

These large apartments were probably intended to be used with those of the adjoining wing, while the rest of the mansion was being erected, but it is very likely they were never occupied, and that the old Manor House (which most likely stood on ground at the N.W. angle of the supposed court, as shown by the dotted lines of the plan), was still his residence at the death of the last Lord Marney.

As to the western wing, a survey of the cellars and other substructures enables me to imagine the general arrangement of the apartments, and this is confirmed by a glance at the ceilings of the upper floor.

Various alterations from time to time have obliterated many of the traces of the old work on the ground floor, but it seems to have consisted of two large apartments and one smaller one at the end [see dotted lines in plan],

L A Y E R M A R N E Y H A L L .



Section from N. to S. Entrance Tower. Section from E. to W.

0 10 20 30 40 50 FEET



and though I cannot observe any other than the octagonal staircase before referred to, there was probably another, or intended to be, for the use of these apartments during the completion of the rest of the edifice.

One of these, in which the fire-place is shown on the plan, was probably used as a kitchen. The other had a fire-place in the corner, next the angle turret.

The corridor was lighted by windows looking into the court. The first floor rooms have very fine panelled oak ceilings, and are lighted, each by one window of 4 lights and one of 2 lights, seeming to indicate a sort of screen placed between them and across the room, perhaps to conceal the bed, &c.

It would be useless to speculate further upon the exact domestic arrangements which were to be provided for by this plan, particularly as there are many existing examples of similar edifices of this period.

I must now hasten to describe the architectural character of the exterior, which is generally of that late and debased form of Gothic called Tudor, but mixed in a remarkable manner with certain details of a new and previously unknown style, though prevailing at that time in Italy, and wrought in a material, called by the Italian name of Terra-cotta, which, however, is only very superior pottery work. All the details, however, are subordinated to the prevailing fashion of the English work, and even the parts executed in terra-cotta are moulded specially to give the general outline of the Gothic work, while they carry details of an opposite character.

The material for all the Gothic portion of the edifice (except the stone jambs to the farm buildings, which, it should be observed, bear no traces of this new-born Italian feeling), is moulded red brick so common in the Eastern Counties, and so worthily used in many noble buildings within a very few miles of Layer Marney, with which the usual ornamental work in black brick is used, forming diaper patterns over the surface. But, in addition to this, in certain parts, a very fine plaster has been used, in a manner showing the debased and false notions coming into vogue; for it is used to cover the brickwork, and is evidently intended to represent the stone jambs which

would be naturally used in a country where stone was more common. However, it has long since been peeling off and looking exactly the sham it is, while the honest brickwork and terra-cotta only improve in colour day by day, though rather the worse for wear. I am bound to add, however, this plaster was admirably executed, and better than is usually done in these latter days, when terraces of Roman temples have been produced by the mile in stucco grandeur, and are now standing in stucco misery. The terra-cotta work is confined to the windows and the crowning points of the parapets. These will be seen, by the illustration,\* to be very carefully and elaborately modelled, and with such an Italian spirit pervading them, that I am inclined to assert that they must either have been brought from Italy, or moulded by an eminent Italian artist working in England at the time.

Respecting this point I am glad to be able to give some notes, handed to me by my friend Mr. Digby Wyatt, to whom my acknowledgments are due.

Dallaway, in his "Notes to Walpole," says:—

"Girolamo da Trevizi and Holbein introduced both terra-cotta or moulded brickwork for rich ornaments and medallions or bas reliefs fixed against the walls, plaster work laid over the brick wall and sometimes painted as at Norwich, and square bricks of two colours highly glazed and placed in diagonal lines as at Layer Marney."

Among other Italians in this country whose taste exercised a powerful influence upon Architecture, and the application of Sculpture and Painting to Architecture were, John of Padua, Torrigiano, Girolamo da Trevizi, † Tolo dell'Annunziata, a painter, Benedetto da Rovezzano a very able Florentine sculptor who was associated with Holbein, Zuccheri the painter, Luca Penni. Of these Luca Penni, painter, Tolo dell'Annunziata, painter, and Trevisano, architect and engineer, all pupils, or of the school of Raffaele, were attached to the Court of Henry VIII., and at work before Holbein came here.

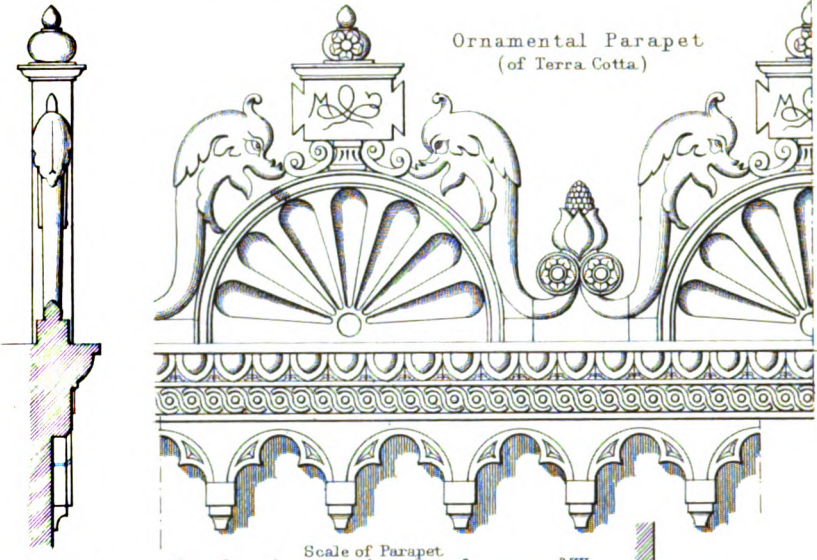
Antonio Cavallari was employed as a gilder by Cardinal Wolsey, and he and Benedetto da Rovezzano worked on the tomb Wolsey commenced for himself during his lifetime. It is possible that the Hampton Court medallions, as well as those in the same style at St. Donat's Castle, Glamorganshire, and in Holbein's Whitehall Gateway, were modelled by Benedetto. [The former are said, however, to have been sent to Wolsey by Leo X.] Layer Marney terra-cotta ornaments were very likely executed under the influence of Girolamo da Trevizi, the King's architect, with whom Sir Henry Marney, the founder of the house,

\* These are also given in Mr. Parker's "Domestic Architecture."

† Often called Trevizani.



Ornamental Parapet  
(of Terra Cotta)



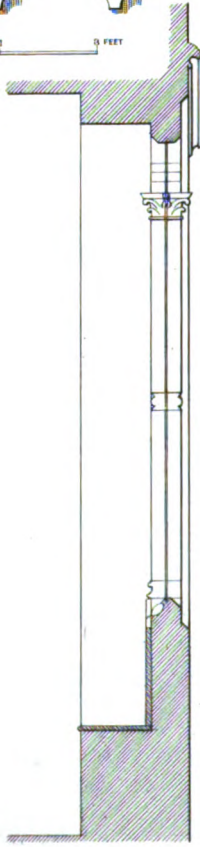
Scale of Parapet



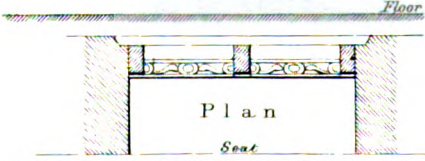
Section



Interior Elevation of Window.  
(in Terra Cotta)



Section



Plan

Seat



Scale

Digitized by Google

must, as Captain of the Guard to Henry VIII., have come into occasional contact.

Torrignano and Benedetto da Rovizzano exercised the greatest influence on sculpture.

I am inclined to believe that the beautiful tomb, in coloured terra-cotta, of Dr. Young in the Roll's Chapel, usually attributed (first by Vertue and Walpole) to Torrignano, is by Benedetto instead, the latter being an experienced, the former an inexperienced, worker in terra-cotta.

With regard to the windows, it will be seen that the mullions assume the form of diminutive square columns, with capitals of Italian design, and the form of the arch head is suggested by scrolls and dolphins intertwining. The surface of the mullions, both on the exterior and interior, are covered with the arabasque ornaments common both in sculpture and ornamental painting of the time in Italy.

The terra-cotta work of the parapet will be seen to commence immediately above the trefoil arches, which belong to the Gothic portion of the design, and consists of a guilloche band, surmounted by a band of egg-and-tongue ornament, carrying the dolphin design, which is really very artistically wrought. The letters **MC**, joined by a knot, are marked on the crowning tablet, supported by the dolphins on each side, and may be conjectured to be the initials of one of the Marneys and his wife.

Over the great first-floor window of the gateway is the space intended to be occupied, no doubt, by the arms of Lord Marney, but I believe, from the appearance of the brickwork, that it was never placed there.

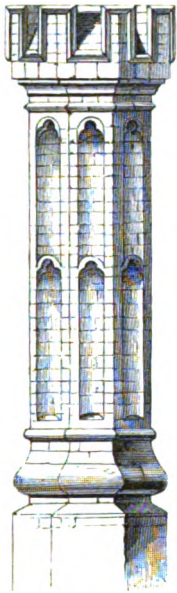
It is somewhat curious that the side turret, adjoining the western wing, should have been built only half, as on plan, and merely as an ornamental feature, for the sake of symmetry, though the one on the opposite side is complete. A portion of a parapet on the western wing should be observed as showing the manner in which it was probably intended to finish these buildings, and which would, of course, have greatly added to their dignity, if carried out. The doorway and lower windows are quite modern.

The chimneys also throughout, especially those of the gateway, are beautiful specimens, and show what pictu-



resque objects such features become in the hands of an artistic builder. So worthy of note are they, that they have been engraved in Mr. Parker's "Domestic Architecture," from which the illustrations in the accompanying plate are taken. There are also, on the same plate, some panel patterns of unusual design, which form part of the lining of the domestic part of the house. The diaper ornament, before mentioned, of black headers over the whole surface of the wall, is also worth noticing.

In closing my remarks, I may add, with a view of suggesting comparison with other works of a similar date, that in the "Glossary of Architecture," (Companion Vol. III.) will be found, in chronological order, many of the most noted of our English buildings in progress during the mediæval period, and if the dates from 1500 to 1550 are looked through, a very good idea may be formed, in most observant minds, of the character of work to which this building belongs. We shall be reminded that Henry VII.'s Chapel at Westminster Abbey was being built; that St. John's College, Cambridge, was founded by Lady Margaret, the Countess of Richmond, whose executor was Lord Henry Marney; King's College Chapel finished; that Christ's Church, Oxford; St. George's Chapel, Windsor; Hampton Court Palace, and others, too numerous to mention, were in course of erection, all in the later Gothic style; and, though some more debased than others, yet showing no trace of transition in style. Then let us turn to Italy, where the first stone of St. Peter's was being laid at Rome (in the same year, 1506, that the "Great Harry," the first ship of the Royal Navy of England, was launched), where the genius of Raffaele and Michael Angelo was exerting incalculable influence over the arts. Endless intrigues were being carried on between this country and Italy by Wolsey and the Court, while, also, the taste for magnificence in building was being developed, and a new fashioned style being introduced by foreign artists. Let us recollect, further, the influence which this foreign element had in moulding our later Gothic into a peculiar style, destined to become so characteristic of the domestic buildings of this country, under the name of Elizabethan. Recalling



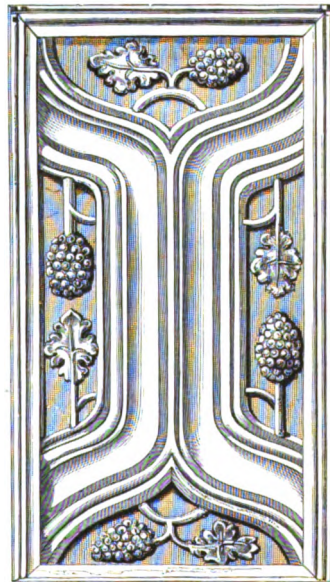
Chimney.



Chimney.



Panel.



Panel.

DETAILS FROM LAYER MARNEY HALL.



all these facts, we shall see at once the interest attaching to this very early, if not the very earliest, indication of Italian influence, exhibited in the walls of a mansion built by one of the courtiers of King Henry VIII., just before the year 1525.

For in this latter year John Lord Marney died, having succeeded his father, Lord Henry, in 1524, who had been but the year before raised to the peerage. It seems remarkable that in this year, 1524, when Lord Henry died, King Henry VIII. was celebrating the feast of St. George at New Hall in Essex, not very far off. Who shall say but that he might have visited Laver Marney also, had not the noble owner been cut off from further entertainments or intrigues? No Marney lived to take part in the events which were then casting their shadows forward—events which have never been surpassed, for their importance to the world. But our story is done, nothing further but common-place decay is written on Laver Marney's walls. Whether history will deign to add another chapter—whether any of its ancient grandeur will ever come back—whether a railway will run straight through the gateway, or call for its entire destruction, remains to another generation to see. That its present owner will deal tenderly with it must be the wish of all, be they Archæologists or not, in the technical sense of the word.

A few words with regard to the Church and the Tombs.

It may be conjectured that a Church or Chapel was founded as soon as the Norman family of Marney was established on this spot now called Laver Marney; but we *know* that leave to “empark his wood of Lire within the precincts of the Forest of Essex,” was given to William de Marney in the year 1264, by Henry III., and that in the time of Edward II., 1330, some one of the same name, if not the same person, founded, *in the Church*, a college for a warder and two chaplains and two chantries. Therefore, there must have existed an Early English or Decorated building.

Incidentally, I may mention, that in 1377 Sir Robert de

Marney was the owner of Wardon's Hall, in the parish of Willingdale Doe; and in 1391 the same Sir Robert held the gift of South Ockenden. So that in the fourteenth century the name assumed an important position in the county, and, therefore, its ecclesiastical arrangements at home were not likely to be neglected.

In 1402 Sir William de Marney was High Sheriff of Essex and Hertfordshire; and in his will, dated 1414, he appointed his body to be buried in "Choro ecclesiæ de Marney."

The tomb erected, in pursuance of this order, a very fine example of the best period of Perpendicular work in alabaster, now exists in the chancel of the Church, with its base partially below the present floor—which is excavated a little to show it, and surrounded by some clumsy wooden rails. The base is ornamented on each side with 4 rich traceried panels, and a similar one at each end, bearing heraldic shields. The figure itself is of white marble, clothed in armour, *cap à pié*, the head resting on a helmet, and the feet upon a lion (the Marney crest), the hands are clasped.

From a cursory observation of the building, I may say that of the Church, in which this tomb was originally erected, nothing now remains (at least visible to the eye), though probably many, if not all, the main walls are ancient, and the general plan unaltered. It consists of nave, chancel, with north aisle attached to, or in continuation of, a Chantry Chapel, which, perhaps, at one time, formed a sort of north aisle to the nave, though now divided from it; tower at the west end, porch on the south side, and an entry on the north through the chancel aisle. All the details of the building are of a character similar to those already described in the domestic buildings, the arches being four-centred, and formed of moulded bricks.

But in the archway between the Church and its north aisle is a tomb in terra-cotta, exactly similar in style and general design to the details of the windows and parapets before described, though even more elaborate. A recumbent effigy of Henry, the first Lord Marney (who died, let us recollect, in 1523), dressed in robes of the

garter, lies under a canopy, supported by small ornamental columns, with capitals, architraves, &c., after Italian design.

This tomb was probably erected by the son, John Lord Marney, whose own tomb was the next year to be required, and which was by will ordered to be placed in the Chantry Chapel, with an altar at the east end, and a brass for each of his wives. This monument to Lord John, is similar to that of Sir William in the chancel, in most respects, and bears an effigy in black marble. It seems probable, therefore, that the terra-cotta canopy tomb was erected by Lord John out of deference to his taste, or according to his express wishes, and was probably executed by the Italian workmen in the neighbourhood, whom Lord Henry had employed upon the mansion, or was ordered from the same artists in Italy who supplied the terra-cotta windows and parapets. One would suppose, also, that Lord John's tastes differed considerably from those of his father, and that he preferred the good old Gothic School to the new fangled notions of these Italianists, against whom he probably, like many others in England, began to have a well-founded prejudice.

Be that as it may, these tombs are very remarkable in their juxtaposition, and are almost as picturesque as a similar group in the chancel of Arundel Church, Sussex, some of which are of terra-cotta, and of similar design to these we are noticing.

The tomb of John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, in the chancel of Castle Hedingham Church, is a few years later than this (1539), and shows the form of altar tomb still prevailing, though no effigy is placed upon it.

In fact this Italianism did not "go down" at first, to use a common phrase, but afterwards revolutionised the whole of architecture, till now, in the present day, we have to fight vigorously for the lost ground of mediæval art.

I may add, in conclusion, that in the Church of Little Horkesley is a brass to "Dame Brygete Marnay," being her figure, with that of her two husbands, one on each side; John Lord Marnay is on the right, in full armour, with a tabard of arms, but without a helmet, his feet

rest upon a lion. The following is the inscription over all :—

“ Here under lyethe Dame Brygete Marnay late the wyffe of John Lorde Marnay and Sometyne wyffe to Mr. Thomas Ffyndorne Esquyer and decessyd the xxth day of September in the yere of our Lord God mccccxlix.”

This is copied from an engraving published in a Quarterly Paper by John Weale, 1845, but there seems some error in copying this name. It is probably *Swynbourne*.

# TRANSACTIONS

OF

## The Essex Archæological Society.

---

---

### WALTHAM ABBEY.

*Letter from* SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H., F.R.S., *to the Rev. Edw. L. CUTTS, (Hon. Sec. to the Essex Archæological Society,) containing particulars in further illustration of the early history of Waltham Abbey.*

DEAR SIR,

THE interest which the Essex Archæological Society has already taken, in the Second Volume of their "Transactions," in illustration of the early History of Waltham Abbey, induces me to forward to you, for their notice, copies of two Memorials of Record of that Abbey's history, which have not hitherto been published.

Tovi, the standard bearer to King Canute, is acknowledged to have been the first founder here of a religious House for two secular Priests, a Cross, with the figure of Our Saviour upon it, which had been found at Montacute and transferred here, gave its name and sanctity to the foundation. Harold, in one account, is stated to have been entirely relieved from a stroke of palsy by a visit to this Cross; and that in consequence of it he re-built the Church, increased the number of its secular Canons to twelve, and furnished it with an ample endowment.

From other authorities, as I have stated, in the last edition of Sir William Dugdale's "Monasticon," Harold's selection of the place was owing to the circumstance of its having been bestowed upon him by King Edward the



Confessor, into whose possession it had come, Athelstan, the son of Tovi, having squandered away the estate.

Certain it is, from King Edward the Confessor's Confirmation Charter, that Harold endowed his new foundation with no fewer than seventeen manors, the boundaries of nine of them being distinctly stated.

Of the first of the two Memorials of record which I beg to introduce to the Society's notice, it comes from a volume of Dr. Matthew Hutton's Collections, preserved among the Harleian Manuscripts in the British Museum, No. 6,978, entitled "Excerpta ex variis Registris;" and the immediate article I am transcribing entered as

"Quædam ex I. ii. Walt. Covntr.  
Cronica.

"1177. Statim post festum sancti Hilarii Rex celebravit magnum Concilium apud Northampton cum Episcopis, Comitibus et Baronibus suis. In hoc Concilio Gwydo Decanus de Waltham resignavit in manu domini Regis Decanatum suum Ecclesiæ Sanctæ Crucis de Waltham, quem Rex magno desiderio habere desideravit. *Voverat enim Deo et beate Thomæ Cant. martyri quod in ejus martyris honore Abbatia quædam Canonicorum regularium ædificare, in remissionem peccatorum suorum, et ab Hugone Cardinali et Apostolicæ sedis Legato impetraverat quod in prædicta Ecclesia de Waltham, remotis inde Canonicis secularibus, canonicos regulares statuere liceret.*

"In eodem Concilio in octabis Sancti Hilarii venit Rex usque Windesours et inde misit Ricardum Cant. Archiepiscopum, et Gauridum Eliensem, et Gilb. Lond. Episcopos usque ad Waltham, ubi prædictus Decanus simpliciter et absolute resignavit in manu ipsius Archiepiscopi et Episcoporum illorum Decanatum suum de Waltham et ipsi ibidem præciperunt, ex parte Regis, Canonicis sæcularibus qui ibi erant venire ad Regem ad recipiendum. Excambium de præbendis suis, et prædicti Episcopi in scripto poni omnes redditus et eorum valentiam Ecclesiæ de Waltham et Regi scriptum illud miserunt."

The circumstance of King Henry the Second having been induced to lavish so much wealth as he appears to have done upon the reconstruction of Waltham Abbey, has not heretofore been considered as what it appears really to have been; namely, the fulfilment of a vow after the murder of Archbishop Becket. The Abbey was already amply endowed. The Church, it seems more than probable, was entirely rebuilt by Henry II.

---

The following was the return of the clear Amount of the

Revenue of the Abbey of Waltham in 1266, as recorded in the Waltham Chartulary M.S., Harl. 391, fol. 23 :—

“Anno Domini M.CC.lx. sexto. Dominus Papa concessit Domino Regi Decimam omnium Præventium Ecclesiasticorum totius Angliæ, exceptis paucis Domibus religiosis, et bonorum temporalium decimam Religiosorum, quæ quidem Decima exigebantur secundum veram estimationem, et non secundum antiquam. Abbas itaque et Prior et quidam de Fratribus istam Taxationem subcriptam fecerunt de Maneriis et Ecclesiis nostris juxta verum valorem, deductis expensis necessariis scilicet sine quibus fructus colligi non poterunt nec haberi.”

*In Dioc. London.*

De Manerio de Waltham	£16	13	4
De Ecclesia de Waltham	33	6	8
De Sywardestone.....	13	—	—

De Nasinge 48s., quia de eodem manerio solvuntur £20, ad firmam Domine Regis., De ecclesia £6 13s. 4d.

De Eppinge £14, q. de eodem £20, ad firmam domini Regis computantur.

De Eccles ejusdem	£10.
De Stanstede	£11 9s.
De Netleswelle	£10 0s. 11d.
De Passefend	£13 15s. 2d.
De Borham	20s.
De Stanweye	24s. 4d.
De Redditu in Lond.	£13.
De Takeleye	£5.
De Stanforde	£8.
De Thorundue	£9 18s.
De Walda	£11 15s. 11d.
De Upminstre	£7 17s.
De Luketune	£11 2s.
De Wudeford	£5 14s. 11d.
De Wormelaya	£4 16s. 8d.
Summa	£210 17s. 3d. S <sup>a</sup> Decimæ £21 1s. 10d.

*In Dioc. Sar.*

De Heywde	£10.....
Redditus in Gildeford	4s.
De Ecclesia de Windesou'es	£26.....
Summa	£36 4s. S <sup>a</sup> Decimæ 74s. 5d.

*In Dioc. Winton.*

De Catenham	£5. Decimæ 10s.
-------------	-----------------

*In Dioc. Lincoln.*

De Manerio de Melaho £10.

De Brikendure £16 De Ecclesia omnium Sanctorum de Hertford £6 13s. 4d.

De Alricheseye £8. De Ecclesia ejusdem £12.  
 De manerio de Wrengle £12.  
 De Ecclesia ejusdem £18.  
 De Mumbi £5.  
 De Emwelle £1.

Summa £88 13s. 4d.

Summa Decimarum £8 18s. 4d.

*In Dioc. Norwik.*

De Ecclesia de Geyst £5.  
 De Ecclesia de Geystwait £10.  
 De medietate Ecclesie Skermy £11.  
 In Rissewrche 10s.  
 De redditu in Stokesb. 20s.  
 Summa £27 10s.  
 Decimæ 55s.

*In Dioc. Eliens.*

De Ecclesia de Badburham £10.  
 De manerio ejusdem £1 10s. —  
 De Caumpes et de Horreth £10 13s. 4d.  
 De Ecclesia de Caumpes £5.  
 Summa £27 3s. 3d.

*Summa totalis* £395 7s. 11d.

*S<sup>a</sup> Decimæ totalis* £29 10s.

To the Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS,

*Hon. Secretary to the Essex Archaeological Society.*

## THE INFLUENCE OF THE COUNTY OF ESSEX ON THE SETTLEMENT AND FAMILY HISTORY OF NEW ENGLAND.

BY COLONEL JOSEPH LEMUEL CHESTER,

*Corresponding Member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, and Honorary  
Member of the Essex Archaeological Society.*

THE founders of a great nation, whatever its history and ultimate fate, are justly entitled to remembrance, and the respectful consideration of posterity. Nations are not created by accident, nor do they afterwards grow altogether at random, like prolific weeds; but, while subject, of course, to the usual operation of natural laws, they take their character, and shape their destinies, according to the wisdom and foresight, or folly and recklessness, of certain individuals, who, singly or combined, presided at their birth and nurtured their infant existence. As the influence of the mother, for good or evil, upon the future career of the child to which she has given being, so, to a greater or less extent, upon the organic nature of a nation, is the effect of the character and conduct of those to whom it owes its position on the pages of the world's great history.

Among all the nations of the earth, there is none that appeals so directly and unresistingly to the consideration of the people of Great Britain as the one which sprang originally from their own loins. Whatever may have been the temporary alienations and dissensions that have since occurred between them, it is impossible for either of them ever to forget their relative characters of parent and offspring. The child may have been, at times, rebellious and self-willed, and the parent, perhaps, too rigid and overbearing; but that tender domestic relation has continued to exist for nearly two centuries and a half, and is recognized

at this day, on this island and on that continent, by every man and woman of both nations whose feelings and sentiments are entitled to any regard. It is possible that the more modern transatlantic generations have come to regard the relationship as of a still more venerable character, and to speak of their great ancestress as one or two degrees farther removed in consanguinity; but this should rather be construed as a respectful and affectionate compliment, than otherwise—for who does not know and venerate all that is embodied in the character of a good old English grandmother?

That the original founders of New England—that germ of the great nation which subsequently spread itself so rapidly over the half of a continent—were generally of English birth and descent, is a fact I need not stop to discuss. My present object is to show, especially, that, in the foundation and early history of the colonies, the single county of Essex, and, to be still more particular, this precise portion of that county in about the centre of which we are to-day assembled, had more to do, and exerted more influence, than all the rest of England combined; and, consequently, that it is to this identical neighbourhood, strictly speaking, rather than to the entire kingdom, that the origin of New England, and through it the American nation, must be traced by the careful antiquary.

From a list of the earliest settlers in New England, being those who were technically made freemen of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay between the years 1631 and 1641, comprising about 500 names, generally of heads of families, and representing the real strength of the Colony, I have selected, almost at random, the following:—

Abell, Adams, Allen, Angier, Ames, Appleton, Archer, Arnold, Atkinson, Barker, Barnes, Bell, Bendall, Bennett, Biggs, Blake, Bloomfield, Bourne, Bradbury, Brewster, Bridge, Briscoe, Brooke, Browne, Bulkeley, Burton, Button, Carrington, Chamberlain, Chapman, Clarke, Coggeshall, Coldham, Cole, Coleman, Collins, Cooke, Cooper, Cotton, Crane, Cross, Curtis, Dalton, Davenish, Davies, Davis, Davy, Day, Dean, Dinney, Dudley, Dyer, Eaton, Elliott, Ely, Emery, Farr, Firmin, Fiske, Fitch, Ford, Fowler, Freeborn, Freeman, French, Fuller, Gardner,

Gibbs, Gibson, Gill, Godfrey, Goff, Grafton, Greene, Hale, Hall, Harlakenden, Harris, Harrison, Hart, Hawkes, Hawkins, Haynes, Haywood, Howe, Hubbard, Hudson, Humphreys, Jackson, Jeffrey, Jenner, Johnson, Kempe, King, Lake, Lambert, Langley, Lightfoot, Lockwood, Marshall, Marsh, Martin, Meade, Minot, More, Morris, Morse, Mott, Mills, Nelson, Newman, Nutt, Page, Palmer, Parker, Parkes, Parmenter, Partridge, Peacock, Perry, Peters, Phillips, Porter, Purchas, Pynchon, Pyne, Rainsford, Rawlins, Raymond, Roberts, Robinson, Rogers, Rowe, Ruggles, Russell, Sadler, Saltonstall, Sandford, Sands, Scott, Sharp, Shaw, Sherman, Smith, Southcott, Sparhawk, Spencer, Stanley, Stebbins, Steele, Stevens, Stone, Strange, Swan, Swift, Symonds, Tabor, Talcott, Taylor, Thomas, Thompson, Tower, Towne, Townsend, Turner, Tuthill, Wade, Walker, Walton, Ward, Warner, Warren, Watson, Webb, West, Weston, Wilcox, Willis, Wheeler, White, Whiting, Wood, and Wright.

These are not only all ancient Essex surnames, but were borne by men whose origin, in most instances, has been traced directly to that county; and this selection, it will be seen, comprises considerably more than one-third of those contained in the list mentioned. A little care would, doubtless, enable me to add from fifty to one hundred more to the number, but the predominance is already sufficiently great for my present purpose.

These were the men who, nearly two centuries and a half ago, actuated by various sentiments, bade farewell to their friends and the scenes of their infancy and manhood, and left these smiling plains and valleys, to encounter, with their wives and little ones, first, a perilous sea-voyage of several thousand miles, and then an equally perilous struggle for existence on a strange and inhospitable shore, under an unnatural climate, and among the human savages by whom the western world was then peopled. These were the men to whom what was afterwards a great Republic owed its first existence—brave English men, who took their very lives in their hands, and faced with dauntless courage all the certain dangers and uncertain terrors of the enterprise to which they had committed themselves—aye, and brave English women too, whose sublime devotion has never since been paralleled, and to which ample justice has never yet been done.

I am very much afraid that, if you look for most of these names in that wonderful collection of family histories so admirably perpetuated at the College of Arms, the obliging and usually successful Heralds will be utterly unable to gratify your curiosity. They are not, strictly speaking, heraldic names. While a few of the lesser gentry may have been among their numbers, the pioneers of New England generally had other uses for their shields than simply to exhibit a blazonry of arms. The men who, clad in homespun garments, as they sat in their rough pews in their humble places of worship, kept one hand upon their Bibles or Psalm-books and the other upon the triggers of their muskets, were not, it must be frankly confessed, usually of what is known as gentle blood. We must look elsewhere for the records of their ancestry, and the search is not a difficult one. The moss-grown tombstones in every neighbouring church-yard, and the mildewed pages of your venerable Parish Registers, reveal these names at every step and on every leaf, and it is almost exclusively to these that the American genealogist can appeal with any hope of success.

One reason why due credit has not hitherto been given to the county of Essex for its paramount influence on the early history of New England arises from the fact that many of the original settlers have been assigned to other portions of England, while properly belonging to that county. As an illustration: two men named Rogers, who emigrated in one of the earliest ships, from their personal character, scholastic attainments, and position as eminent divines, probably had more to do with moulding both the social and political character of the colony than, at least, any other two men in it. One went directly from Rowley, in Yorkshire, and the other from Assington, in Suffolk, where they had been respectively preaching for some years, and they are therefore usually spoken of as belonging to those counties. But the former was born at Wethersfield, in Essex, where his father—the Rev. Richard Rogers—preached for 41 years, and where he died and was buried; while the latter was the son of Rev. John Rogers, “the famous preacher of Dedham,” in Essex, the inscription under whose bust, still in good preservation in the chancel, records that he had ministered in that church for the space of 31 years.

These were, therefore, really both Essex men, and their personal importance and influence on the early fortunes of New England may be discovered by a reference to quaint old Cotton Mather, who carefully embalmed their memory in his "Magnalia." I might adduce numerous other instances of a similar character, and, indeed, my investigations into this subject already enable me to affirm unhesitatingly that, of the early New England settlers, the origin of considerably more than one-half can be traced directly or indirectly to the county of Essex.

Another proof of my original proposition is to be found in the fact that, so predominant were the Essex men in the early days of the colony, the settlements, as they were organized one after another, received names, the majority of which had their prototypes in the neighbourhoods they had quitted, and their attachment to which they thus manifested. I need mention only the names of Billerica, Braintree, Chelmsford, Colchester, Dedham, Eastham, Hadley, Harwich, Haverhill, Malden, Newport, Springfield, Topsfield, Waltham, and Wethersfield. These names were given to the very earliest settlements established by the colonists, and are retained to this day, while the mere hamlets which they at first represented have now swelled into important towns and even cities. I may also add that these names have been reduplicated, and now represent towns and cities in almost every State in the Union, as the descendants of the pilgrim fathers in their turn sought new homes in other portions of the country. One, in particular, seems to have been a universal favourite, for I find, in the latest "United States' Gazetter," the name of Springfield repeated no less than forty-eight times. Another significant fact, worthy of notice in this connection, and which tells its own tale distinctly, without the necessity for any comment, is that the original Wethersfield in New England, like its prototype in ancient Essex, has, from its earliest existence, maintained a pre-eminent reputation for the character and inexhaustible supply of its *onions*, and controls, to this day, the American market, so far as that pungent but very useful vegetable is concerned; the "ropes" of which, in unlimited quantities, bearing the Wethersfield brand, are annually exported to every quarter of the world.



Again, still confirmatory of my proposition was the action of the colonists, as late as the year 1643, when it became necessary, for the purpose of more convenient government, to subdivide the colony into counties. The order of the General Court—the Colonial Ministry and Parliament combined—dated at Boston on the 10th of May, reads as follows:—

“The whole plantation within this jurisdiction (*i.e.* the Colony of Massachusetts Bay) is divided into four shires, to wit—*Essex*, *Middlesex*, *Suffolk*, and *Norfolk*.”

True to their instincts, even in this apparently trifling formality, the Essex men of New England would persist, not only in perpetuating the name of their ancient county, but also in placing it first and foremost in the new calendar.

It is a mistaken notion, although the one usually received, that the early New England settlers were all, or even generally, men properly classed under the denomination of Puritans; and the stereotyped declaration in all secular and religious American histories, that the continent was first settled exclusively by a band of men fleeing from severe and unrighteous persecution, and enforced to seek a new home where they might enjoy unmolested their freedom of conscience, etc., etc., is one that involves both an absurdity and a falsehood, and ought at once to be expunged from the record. That many, perhaps most, of the early emigrants were non-conformists, to a greater or less extent, is doubtless true, and that some of them desired “a larger liberty of *speech*” than was just then permitted them in England may also be admitted; but, beyond this, there is no foundation in actual truth for the frightful picture so persistently presented to the mind of the young American student, whether he stands in his pinnace at the knee of his village schoolmistress, or pores over the ponderous volumes of American history at the University. At the risk of being charged with heterodoxy and a want of patriotism, I venture the assertion, after protracted researches into the family history of the earlier settlers, that not one half of their number left England on account of religious persecution, or were men and women who could justly be termed puritanic in their notions. Indeed, from the voluminous criminal records of the colony in its

earlier days, detailed with painful minuteness by the official historiographers of the time, and the long catalogue of peccadilloes and more serious offences which they reveal as of constant occurrence, it may be safely doubted whether a goodly number of the so-called "pilgrim fathers" (and pilgrim mothers too) possessed any religion at all.

The simple fact is that the colony was composed—as all colonies ever since have been—of a heterogeneous admixture of very good people, and very bad; with still another, and, perhaps, larger class than either of the others, that may be described as neither the one nor the other, but simply indifferent. That the good eventually predominated over the bad is, I think, a matter of history; and it is greatly to the credit of the early rulers of the colonies that they were able, from such rude and antagonistic materials, to lay the foundation of a nation that has proved so respectable as it has.

Speaking particularly of the early emigrants from Essex, it is unquestionably true that a large portion of them were actuated by a desire for more religious latitude than they then enjoyed at home; but there was still another, and I think equally large class, for whose motives I entertain a respect quite as sincere, and for whose character a reverence quite as profound. These were men in the humbler walks of life, whose circumstances were moderate, whose families were large, and who foresaw, in remaining at home, only a perpetual struggle for bare existence, without the prospect or hope of elevating their offspring above the level of their own ineffective lives. To such men as these, the New World opened a vista of positive enchantment. The farmer, tilling laboriously land not his own, and certain only of the conventional six feet of soil where his worn-out bones would at last be laid, believed that there, after a little season of toil and hardship, and perhaps even of extreme suffering, he would be able to stand under the shelter of his own vine and fig-tree, call broad acres of wood and meadow his own, and then, having distributed his possessions, and seen his sons and daughters comfortably settled in life, lay down calmly, satisfied that he had fulfilled his duties as a parent and a citizen. In the same manner, and from the same motives, were the Western States subsequently settled by the descendants of the

early colonists, imbued with the spirit and following in the footsteps of their Essex fathers.

Of such men as these, the New England colonies possessed many; and from among this class, in nine cases out of ten, sprang the future great men of the nation. It is an indisputable fact that very few of those who have become eminent as statesmen or scholars, or who have won for themselves reputations in any of the professions or pursuits of life, can trace their origin to any comparatively higher position in the social scale. I have an illustration exactly in point, which I use the more readily as it also illustrates my other propositions:—

Of the ancestry of two of the American Presidents—father and son in succession (and the son and grandson of whom now represents the country in whose history they bore so conspicuous a part at the Court of St. James), there is no record whatever. It has been only known with certainty that the first of the name emigrated to New England early in the days of the colony, taking with him a numerous progeny, and that he died and was buried there. Who was his father, or from what portion of England he came (though tradition fixed him in Devonshire), or what was his occupation, social condition, or personal circumstances, have hitherto been impenetrable mysteries, in spite of urgent and anxious efforts to solve them. The Herald's College, the various county histories, and all the genealogical repositories of the land contain no reference to his particular family, thus leading to the inevitable conclusion that his origin was very humble. From recent investigations that I have been making, I have at last arrived at the moral certainty that, before quitting England, he followed the occupation of a maltster, in a small way, in a parish within ten miles of where we are now standing.

In numerous other instances I have pursued similar researches with similar results. Repeatedly, as in the case just mentioned, when long tradition has established the ancestors of a New England family in other counties of England, a careful investigation has dissipated the illusion, and they have been traced to some quiet nook or corner of Essex. It is not without good grounds, therefore, that I have attributed to this county a greatly predominant

influence in the foundation and history of New England, and hence of the American nation, for there is no portion of the vast country to which the people of that section have not penetrated, or which they have not, more or less, imbued with their character and spirit.

One word as to the people of New England themselves. The conventional portrait, which represents an ungainly personage, lean in his limbs and lank in his visage, with long straight hair, and an eye twinkling under the double influences of greed of gain and an intense desire to outwit his neighbour in every bargain, and who invariably utters his words with a nasal intonation, is not that of the genuine and historic New Englander—who does not wear this appearance, does not bear this character, and does not talk through his nose, but uses the ordinary vocal organs like an Englishman or any other sensible human being—but rather one of that spurious sort, the result of indiscriminate and protracted admixture with almost every other species of the human race, from the native Indian to the native Ethiopian, including the denizens of every clime, from the North Pole to the South, and from the first to the last degree of longitude. The natural history of modern America is chiefly that of hybrids. There is no country under the sun that has not contributed its quota to its magnificent census. The blood of Saxon and Teuton has long ceased to flow there in separate channels. English, Scotch and Irish, French, Dutch and Spanish, Italian, Greek and Turkish, Swiss, Austrian and Russian, in their elementary constituents, have been gathered into a common crucible, and the extraordinary result of this still more unnatural combination has been the “Universal Yankee”—a sort of ethnological monster—a being who seems to find no *status* in the rigid classification of animal existences.

From this class, I confess—and I also freely admit that it is a large one—there is naturally to be expected little regard for, or attachment to, the Mother Country, its people, or its institutions. Suppose, for a moment, the presence of a representative of this class in our midst to-day. One of his grandfathers grew to manhood among the Scottish mountains, while the other was reared among the dikes of Holland. One of them married a *ci-devant* French countess, and the *frau* of the other once wore the

coronet of a princess in sunny Italy. This accounts fully for his quadruple character. The vari-coloured streams will not mingle freely, but flow side by side, in jealous antagonism, like the waters of the Arve and the Rhone. He retains, although in a modified form, the peculiarities of each of his four ancestors, and, as there is no singleness in his composition, so there is none in his character. He has no antecedents to control his sympathies, no historical associations to cherish, no antiquities to revere. He cannot look back into the past records of any one people, and say that they are also his by inheritance. His very being is divided—he belongs nowhere. (I trust that my mythical countryman will excuse the personality: of course it is not his fault.)

On the other hand—(and I pray that the apparent egotism may be pardoned, for the sake of the practical illustration)—I claim a pure descent. Bone, blood, flesh, and muscle—all is English. Born, though I was, through the accidents of time, among the rugged hills of grim New England, the four sources of my natal streams were in honest Essex, smiling Kent, busy Gloucester, and sunny Devonshire. For aught I know, one set of my earlier sires flourished in the court of King Lear himself, and the other displayed their prowess in field and tournament side by side with the gallant Courteneyns. One thing I do know: I cannot open a page of English history, where deeds of valour and acts of grace for centuries back are recorded, without finding among the names of the actors those of some of my great ancestors. I cannot go into a village churchyard, or tread the dim aisles of a venerable cathedral—at least within the limits of those four shires—without reading, on either side, the solemn testimony that I am wandering among the dust of those long-departed ones, of whom I am so unimportant a descendant. If my heart swells, it is with honest pride that even in these sad memorials I have a personal interest. These are monuments, not of strangers, but of my own family. What though my paternal roof-tree stands three thousand miles away? The vast expanse of sea shrinks to a mere rivulet, over which I leap with a single stride, claiming a lawful right and receiving a cordial welcome to a place in the lofty halls and at the spacious firesides where those of

my own blood have made merry for at least half a decade of centuries.

This, then, is the difference between my supposititious countryman and me to-day: he is paying a formal visit to a distant relation; while I have come *home* to my *mother*!

I speak not for myself alone. There are, I am happy to say, thousands of my countrymen—of full, half, and even quarter English blood—who would echo every sentiment I have uttered; and who, although they may never make, as I have done, a holy pilgrimage to these hallowed shrines, cherish an intense and reverential affection for the ancient land and its people, which has and will for ever set at defiance all the art and wiles of designing statesmen and crooked politicians who may seek to weaken or destroy it. There is a world of meaning in the old maxim, that “blood is thicker than water,” and therein, we may safely conclude, lies the whole secret.

---

## THE 'CHURCH OF ST. NICHOLAS, LITTLE COGGESHALL.

IN the "Transactions" of the Society, published in 1858, some account is given of the little ancient Church in Coggeshall Parva, to which Morant gives the name of S. Nicholas, and which he takes to have been the Parish Church.

It is proposed to take up the subject of this very interesting little Church at the point at which it was left in that account, and to pursue it to the present time.

The Church was there described in its chief details, but some few discoveries have since been made which will prove of considerable service, because they are sufficient to make possible the restoration of the Church, in most, if not all, of the minutest particulars, to its original and chaste beauty.

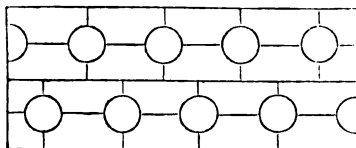
It is a cause of thankfulness that, through the kindness of the late owner, Jonathan Bullock, Esq., of Faulkbourne Hall, the little Church, after three hundred years of desecration, has come back into Ecclesiastical hands, with a view to its restoration, while yet sufficient traces remain, faint and feeble as in some instances they may be, to show what it was three hundred years ago. And it should be mentioned, that with the most thoughtful consideration "*the acre*" of land on which the Church stood, as shown in a map of the estate, dated 1658, has been conveyed with the Church to the Vicar of the parish. There is a probability, but nothing has been discovered to prove, that this acre so defined was actually the ancient Church yard.

The first work was to fence in the land; the next to remove the bay or waggon entrance, which has been made on the south side of the Church, and to clear away the barn floor and accumulations of earth and rubbish from within.

The removal of the earth brought to light the brick base of the font, opposite the doorway, and close against the north wall, with the standing place for the priest on the west side.

A portion of the south wall of the Church, including the doorway up to the western jamb, and half one of the windows, had been broken down to make the farm bay and a convenient entrance for waggons and carts. The foundation of this part of the Church was found and carefully followed, and the exact position of the bases of the doorway was discovered. A portion of one of the capitals of the doorway was still in the wall on the west side, and a piece of one of the jambs, together with the whole of one of the brick piers on which the stone doorway rested. This remains. On it were found the position of two small shafts, all helping to show the character as well as the place of the original doorway. The walls, which are three feet thick, rest on a bed of concrete, coming up nearly to the surface, and about twelve inches thicker than the walls, making a good foot outwards. On this concrete between the jambs of the doorway, and running some way underneath on both sides, and of the whole thickness of the wall, was a course of red brick or tile, represented in the accompanying woodcut (A), and which has not been disturbed.

A



The altar slab was not found, nor any portion of the altar. The undisturbed soil of the floor beneath the east window is some inches above the rest, where the altar would stand on its dais. West of this, and right across the Church, is a line of brickwork, apparently the place of the altar step. The credence of stone is nearly perfect. The double piscina next to it is almost entirely destroyed, and the sedilia, three in number, immediately adjoining the piscina, are in a very mutilated state.

In the centre seat some of the original plastering remains, with a part of a nimbus in the head of the arch, of the colour of red ocre. The head of this seat is somewhat depressed as compared with the seat on either side of it.



In the north wall was found the place of the ambre with the sharp bed of masonry in which the oak slabs at top and bottom lay, and had perished quite away. About two-thirds of the way from east to west on the floor, and near the entrance, are a few string-course bricks, set up edgeways, running east and west and north to south at right angles; for what purpose it does not at present appear.

Amongst the fragments of stone and tiling intermixed with the earth were some small portions of little Purbeck marble shafts, and enough of broken tiling to make out the somewhat remarkable pattern of the pavement, which is shown in the opposite Plate. The colours are *black*, *yellow* or *buff*, and *unmistakable green*. Other pieces of tiling were found, some of them having Lombardic letters, *yellow* on a *red* ground. Some of these were in all probability thrown out from the Abbey, and found their way here in the character of rubbish, when the hand of the spoiler made havoc of sacred things, and when a barn floor in the Church was wanted for the convenience of the farmer.

Many small pieces of coloured glass were found, probably from the east window: and some bits of quarries in brown outline painting; and one piece which is taken to give the curve of the medallions which probably occupied the three eastern lights.

Two or three very small pieces of brass work, on which were stamped the *fleurs de lis*, were found just outside the doorway, more resembling the ornaments of an office book than anything else, as if in the frenzy of an unholy zeal it had been tossed out of the sacred place.

A piece of Purbeck marble has been found, which looks like part of the bowl of the font or of the stoup.

The string-course, which was of emerald green, glazed, was much destroyed, but its position, all round, traceable; and the sharp bed of the string between the doorway and the window west of it was found, together with the brick-work where it stopped, to go horizontally over the doorway.

The whole of the exterior flint and tile work, up to the brick dressings, appears to have been plastered; and the







**PAVEMENT FROM CHAPEL AT LITTLE COGGESHALL, ESSEX**

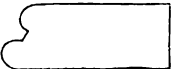
*W West, Chromo-lith London*



whole of the interior, the white plastering within being relieved and warmed by plain lines of chocolate or red-ocre paint, after the manner of mock masonry, with *double* lines round the windows, both on the face of the walls and on the sply.

An elegant scroll pattern, in the same colour, decorated the spandrels of the east window. A *fac simile* of this decoration, taken many years ago on the spot, by Mr. Alfred Sprague, and kindly sent to the Vicar of the parish to be of use in the restoration, was produced.

The easternmost portion of the present roof is ancient, a small portion of the wall plate remains at the north-east corner, and is represented on the accompanying wood-cut (C), the rolls of which were *green*, the interval *white*.

It is intended in time to restore this  interesting little Church to its proper state, with the most scrupulous care. The doorway has been accomplished, and some of the window lights have been restored—bricks of the true character having been made for the purpose.

On the 25th of June last year, in clearing away the earth in front of the altar, the workmen found indications of a grave in the centre, lying east and west. Bits of broken tiles, intermixed with the soil, making it plain that the grave had once been disturbed, it was thought desirable that the earth should be carefully removed to ascertain exactly what had been done and what remained. Fragments of stone and bricks, large tiles and of patterned glazed tiles, and a small piece of lead, were all that could be found, save the stone sides of the coffin and the bottom stone, with its drain holes, and a large hole in the bottom stone towards the head at the west end. The rifler had done his work thoroughly, lest treasure should be lost for want of searching—nothing left, not one poor bone in the last resting place of God's servant!

There appear to be two graves, at least, by the side of that just mentioned. These have not been opened. The few bones that were found in the soil near the grave that was examined were carefully collected, and as they were in all likelihood part of the remains which once reposed in the stone coffin, and had been sacrilegiously scattered

when the grave was spoiled, they were reverently replaced on the lower coffin stone and covered by the Vicar, in the presence of the workmen and some other parishioners and friends who happened to be on the spot. There was no trace of name or date.

One age destroys, another restores ; one casts out with sacrilegious hands even the bones of the dead ; another in charity replaces them ; and what was once said for the whole corpse, in hope, may now again, in hope, be said of the smallest portion of it—*requiescat in pace !*

---

## A N C I E N T   W I L L S .

(No. 2.)

By H. W. KING.

At the second general meeting of the Essex Archæological Society held at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, in April, 1852, I read a brief memoir of certain wills executed by inhabitants of the County in the 15th and 16th centuries.

I endeavoured on that occasion to impress upon the Society a true idea of the very great historical value of these documents and the inventories which sometimes accompany them, and I expressed a hope that the various literary and archæological associations would exercise an influence which would induce the legislature to remove the vexatious and restrictive regulations by which those records were fenced in, and afford inexpensive means of consulting them for literary purposes.\*

Nearly twelve years have elapsed since I addressed the Society on this subject, but it was not until recently that these long desiderated concessions to the claims of historical literature and archæology have been granted. Under the old jurisdiction at Doctors' Commons not the slightest feeling in favour of literature and historical enquiry was evinced; every appeal made to the authorities by the learned Societies and the most distinguished literary persons, for some relaxation of their stringent, absurd and exclusive regulations, was utterly disregarded. Notwithstanding Lord Langdale had modified and reduced the fees for consultation of the public Records, and, in 1851, Sir John Romilly had remitted them altogether to historical students, the authorities at Doctors' Commons continued inexorable.

On the institution of the Court of Probate, under the

\* Journal of Essex Arch. Soc. vol. i. p. 149.



enlightened administration of the late learned Judge, Sir Cresswell Cresswell, the application was again renewed, by the Camden Society, aided by the Society of Antiquaries and many eminent literary persons. His Lordship "at once admitted the principle that documents which had none but literary uses, ought to be accessible to literary men," and, as soon as the necessary arrangements could be made, liberally acceded to the appeal.\*

As an historical enquirer at Doctors' Commons under the old system, till driven from the walls in hopeless despair by the contemplation of the ruinous cost of endeavouring to prosecute really useful investigations, I can but inadequately express my own sense of the value of the privilege conferred, and unite my testimony in the general acknowledgment of the courteous, liberal and ready aid afforded by the gentleman who presides over the Department for Literary Enquiry.

Grateful, therefore, for these privileges, I hasten to lay before the members of the Essex Archæological Society some of the first fruits of my researches in the London Registry.

The Registers of Wills extend throughout the long period of 500 years, from 1383 to the present time, and comprise nearly 2,000 ponderous volumes. They contain a large number of wills of members of the chief families in Essex, and of others connected with the county by landed property, from the earliest dates, as well as those of yeomen, opulent traders and others. Many of them are of great historical and archæological interest, and perhaps there are but few of the earlier centuries which do not possess much interest relatively. The wills proved within the archdeaconries of Essex and Colchester, and formerly preserved at Chelmsford, have not yet been rendered accessible in London, but will, I believe, eventually be open for consultation for literary purposes, when the necessary arrangements are perfected. These will offer a much wider field for research, and, as it may be presumed they comprise a greater number of the testaments

\* For the history of the past and present of Doctors' Commons, so far as literature is concerned with it, see introduction to a recent volume published by the Camden Society, 1863, "Wills from Doctors' Commons." Permission is given to consult Wills down to the year 1700.

of the clergy, yeomanry and townfolk, afford a closer insight into the domestic manners and social condition of the middle classes.

I have selected for my second communication on ancient wills,

**THE WILL OF JOHN SMYTH, Esq.; OF BLACKMORE,**

chiefly on account of the interesting inventory it presents of the apparel, furniture, and in short, of the whole domestic and military equipment of a country gentleman in the reign of Hen. VIII., as contained in several schedules, which being of the nature of codicils, were appended to and proved with the will.

John Smyth, of Blackmore, was the second son of Thomas Smyth, of Rivenhall, of an ancient family, who, according to Morant, derived themselves from Sir Michael Carrington, Standard-bearer to King Rich. I. in the Holy Wars, one of whose descendants, John Carrington, Esq., in the 15th century, changed his surname to Smyth. The family appear to have largely augmented their possessions out of the plunder of abbey lands. The Smyths of Cressing held the estate there of the Knights Hospitallers; Clement Smyth, brother of the testator, acquired monastic property in Coggeshall. John Smyth was one of the auditors of King Hen. VIII., and to him that monarch granted the manor and site of the Priory of Blackmore in 1540. He had given it at the first suppression to Cardinal Wolsey for part of the endowment of his new college at Oxford, but on the Cardinal's attainder it had reverted to the Crown.\* The priory had been laid waste, and the Canons Regular of S. Augustine had been driven houseless and homeless into the world. Within the brief space of two years after the suppression the great Cardinal was beggared, disgraced and dead, and almost as rapidly the stroke of death fell upon the next grantee, who thus commences his will:

**IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.**—The tenth day of the moneth of May, the yere of ower lorde god a thousande fyve hundrethe. fourtye and thre, and in the xxxv yere of the raigne of o' Sovereigne lorde Henry theight, by the grace of god, King of England, France and

\* Vide Morant's Hist. Essex, sub Blackmore, Rivenhall and Cressing.

Irelande, Defend' of the faythè, and in earthe supreme hedd of the Church of England and Ireland, I John Smyth, of blakemore in the county of Essex, Esquyer, being of hole mynde and in good and perfytt remembrance, laude and prayse be unto god, make and ordeyn this my present testament as touching the disposicyon of all my moveable goods, cattalles and debts, in maner and forme following, that ys to saye, ffirst and principally I comende my soule to Allmighty Jhesu my maker and redemer, to whome and by the merits of whose blessed passion is my hole trust of clere remission and forgiveness of my synnes, and my body to be buryed in christen sepulture in suche place as it shall please god to provyde and ordeyne for me.

I have given the preamble literally chiefly as a specimen of the change of the formulary shortly after the Reformation. Avoiding now the tedious phrasology and repetitions of the law, I shall give but a brief abstract of the contents of the will, which is very long, in modern orthography except in those passages which appear to possess any peculiar interest. The testator proceeds:—

Give to the Churchwardens and parishioners of Blackmore for the reparation of their church 20s. To Dorothy my wife her apparel and jewels. I will that all my plate, my chain of gold and household stuff be divided into two moieties, one to be given to my wife, Dorothy Smyth, to her own use, the other to my Executors for the performance of my will, and to that intent one moiety of the plate and gold chain to be sold. My corn and cattle in the County of Essex, as in the counties of Berks and Gloucester, to be disposed in like manner. 'I will that all the standers and implements of household which are now remainyng at my mansion called Smythes hall, in Blakemore in Essex, as it doth at Lechlade in the County of Glouc', as it doth appear in a scedle hereunto annexed, shall there contynually remainy.' 'I give to my sister Katherine Smyth her free dwellynge in my house, yt is to say one chamber where Sylvester and his wif now inhabyteth, by the yatchouse of the churchyard of Blakemore, and also the lytell house next the stables for life . . . . and for her fewell to brenn at ye sayd house yerely ten carte lods of wood as long as she will there inhabyte . . . . and one annuitye yerely of fourty shillings sterlinge' . . . . To Dorothy, my wife, my lease in Cherney in the Co. of Berks, and the lease of the Parsonage of Lachlade, and the Priory there in the County of Gloucester, and the two severall leases I hold of the Dean and Chapter of S<sup>t</sup> Paul's, London, of the messuages or tenements in Sermon-lane, London. To William Smyth and Gyles Smyth, my sons, the profits and rents reserved of the farms of Shulddham and Canebyn in Norfolk, now in the occupation of my brother Leonard. Remainder to my daughters Frances and Dorothy Smyth when 21 or married. To my said two sons the leases of my houses in Barbican, London, held of the Dean and Chapter of S. Paul's. To my Executors the letting of the lands called Estlees and Widneymead for seven years, for the performance of my will; and at the expiration, the leases shall go to my son William, he paying to his brother Giles 31<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> over aud above the King's rent. Remainder to

Giles; if he die, 'then I wyll that one of my daughters which shall chance not to be marryed unto the heyre of Henry Mackwyllyam shall have the said lease to her and her assignes.' To Wylyam Dyx my son in law, and to Luce my daughter, the lease of my farm in Bemflete, and the term that I have in the farm called Rushnashe belonging to the Chantry of \*— in the cathedral church of S. Paul, London. †

The preceding abstract will be found to contain quite new matter respecting the property and tenures of the testator, and the extract which follows is a curious illustration of the practice of the period in relation to wardships, I therefore print it *literatim* :

'My executours to receve all the rentes and profyts of my maner of Bathon in the Co. of Essex, which I hold of the King's Majestye, duryng the minority of the heyres of Henry Mackwyllyam Esquier, † deceased, and they to yeld account therof as aforesayd, towards fyndinge my sayd two daughters Frances and Dorotheie. I give and bequethe to the sayd Fraunces my daughter the maryage of the heyre of the sayd Henry Mackwyllyam, and so from heyre to heyre of the sayd Henry Macwyllyam; and if it shall fortune the sayd Fraunces to die before marryage be lawfully celebrated betweene her and any of the sayd heyres, or that the sayd heyre do refuse to marry with the sayd Fraunces at suche time as myn executours or any of them or their assignes shall tender the sayd marryage, that then as nowe and now as then, I wyll that my sayd daughter Dorotheie be offered in marryage to the sayd heyre, and yf he refuse the marryage of both, then I wyll that myn executours or their assignes shall sell the sayd heyre for the most prouffit and advantage that they can, and the money comynge of the sayd sale shalbe payd to my sayd daughter ffrances at the tyme of her maryage, or when she shall com to the age of xxj yeres complete, and thone of my sayd daughters to be thothers heyre thereof, yf eyther of them decease before her sayd maryage. §

The testatator next directs that a bill indented be executed between his wife and his executors that the stuff and standerts of household shall remain in Smyth's Hall during her life, and after her decease, as by schedule annexed, and continues :—

'I wyll and bequethe unto Thomas my sonne all my harneys, wepens and artyllary as yt is in my armery or galery a Smythes haul in

\* *Hiatus in Registro*, but the Chantry referred to was that founded 2 July 1239 by Martin de Pateshall, Dean of that Church. Rushnashe or Richnesse is in Canvey Island.

† It will be noticed that the testator's property consisted almost exclusively of church lands and church leases. From his position as auditor he was probably a man to be conciliated by such favours.

‡ For an account of the Mackwilliam family see *Morant*, sub *Stambourne*, *Weever's Fun. Mon.* p. 658 Ed. 1631, where for Stanbridge Church read Stambourne.

§ I do not find whether this project of the testator succeeded; at all events the heir of Henry Mackwilliam did not wed either of John Smyth's daughters.

blackmor, and that myn executours shall savely deliver yt unto him according as it doth appere in an inventory thereof.'

The following directions are then given respecting the education of his children and the wards "which he had bought for the advancement of his daughters."

'I wyll that my thre sonnes Thomas, Wyllyam and Gyles, and also the heyres of Henry Mackwyllyam, whom I have bought for the advancement of my doughters, shalbe brought up honestly and diligently at scole tyll they and every of them shall have convenyent learning in the latin tonge, and after that, by the discrecion of myn executours, to lerne the laws of this realme, or wyth some auditores, or in some other office towards the lawe, whereby they may be better hable to live honestly according to the lawes of God; and also I wyll that my two doughters Frauncs and Dorothe shalbe brought upp vertuously and honestly in lernyng, till they shalbe maryed, and that my executours shall provide honest and convenyent husbands for them, or one of them which shall not be maryed unto theyre of Henry Mackwyllyam, Esquier, when she shalbe hable to be maryed, and to departe and pay unto her for her advancement for her maryage according unto this my wyll to all entents and purposes as my very trust ys in them so to doo.'

The testator then directs that 100 marks be paid to his daughter Dorothy when 21 or married; but if she die in her minority unmarried, he says,

'Then I wyll that myn executours shall dispose the sayd sum of one hundrethe marks in makyng of highwayes, and other dedes of charyty, by their discrecyon, whiche make most meritorious for my soule and all cristen soules.'

Next to benefactions to the Church and alms to the poor, nothing appears to have been regarded as more meritorious than bequests for amending roads and repairing bridges. Such bequests are of frequent occurrence in mediæval wills, and the practice continued long after the Reformation. The testator bequeaths part of the residue of his estate to that purpose as in the ensuing passage:—

'I wyll that all my household servants have honest livery of black clothe ayent my buryall. . . Residue . . . to and among my childern, amendinge of high wayes noyous and other good dedes of charyty after the discrecyon and mynds of my executours and overseers.' Appoints Clement Smyth, Leonard Smyth and Wyllyam Stamford Executors, Rauf Worsley, gent. Richard Pykering, merchant and Citizen of London overseers. The witnesses are John Stamford, attorney of the Court of the King's General Surveyors, Sir Richard Johnson, Priest and John Pykeryng.

By far the most interesting portion of John Smyth's will

are the schedules annexed. Each is headed by a formal declaration that it is to be deemed of the same force and effect as if comprised within the body of the will and is signed by the testator.

## SCHEDULE I

I give unto Dorathee my wif my gowne of tawney damaske furryd with marterns, a gowne of blake damaske faryd with blak saten, and a dublett of tawny velvet. Item I give to my brother Clement a gowne of black chamlett\* faryd with marterns. Item, to Thomas Edmay, Gentylman, my gowne of black caffā,† furryd with black cony; and my best dublett of black saten, quylted. Item, to my syster, my brother Clement's wyf, one newe payre of marterns skynnes. Item, to my broth' Leonard a gowne of black worstede, faryd with jenetts;‡ a newe jerkyn of black velvett and a dublett of black saten, quylted. Item, to my sonne Dixe a gowne of black russett faryd with foynes; and a jerkyn of black damaske faryd with foynes.§ Item, to Thomas Hayes a gowne of black clothe furyd with budge;|| and a jacket of black caffā edged with cony. Item, to Thomas Twysell, Esquyer, my turkes¶ that is new sett. Item, to Mr. Worsley, of the robes, my gelding for myn owne sadell, called Danyell. Item to Mr. Pykeryng, Brewer, my jactett of russett velvett. Item to my cosin Lentall a jacket of blak velvet. Item to Syr Edmond Pethy'm, Knight, my diamont that I had of my wyff. Item to Thomas Smyth, one of the servers of the King's Chamber, a dublett of tawney saten. Item to Thomas Smyth my wives kynnesman a new jerkyn of tawney saten. Item, to Margaret, my wifes mayd, a gowne of black cloth faryd with dammaske. Item to Mary the mayd of the kytchyn a gowne of black clothe faryd with saten. Item to Margaret Baker a single gowne of black clothe which was faryd with velvet. Item, to James Wylson a cloke of black clothe wyth twoo welts of velvett, a blak capp, and my hatt of saten. Item, to old Father Lawrence my marble cloke.\*\* Item to Davy my servant a dublett of black saten, a capp of clothe and a payre of upper stocks of hose of black clothe. Item, to Wyllyam, horsekeeper, a velvett capp and my wynter bootes. Item, to Robert Parkyns my olde night gowne of blewe worsted furryd with lambe. Item to my sonne Thomas my gylt woodknyf with a scaberde†† and gyrdell of velvett. Item to Robert, Scolemaster, a new payre of black hoses made for my self. Item, to Syr Robert, my Chapleyne, an honest sleveles cote to be made newe by my executours. Item, to Wyllyam Cock, my servaunte, my grene cote. Item to Roger Lee, my bayly, my Jerkyn of lether and capp of velvet.

\* Camlet. Faryd *i.e.* furred—fare *i.e.* fur. Halliwell's "Arch. Dict." Obviously also garnished or enriched as in the previous sentence, quasi, 'made fair.'

† A rich stuff, probably taffata.

‡ A species of fur.

§ Foins, fur made of Polecats skins.

|| Budge, Lambskin with the wool dressed outwards, usually worn on the edges of gowns and capes, as B.A. hoods are trimmed. Also the fur from the shank of a kind of kid.

¶ Turkes, turquoise.

\*\* Perhaps variegated or watered resembling veined marble?

†† The woodknife was an important appendage to the equipment of a country gentleman. It was usually richly ornamented and the blade damasked with gold.

Item to Nicholas, my brewer, Wylliam Crowe, Rychard Hockley and John Ffytyhot, to every of them a dublett of black fustyan redy to be made by my executours. John Smythe.

### SCHEDULE II.

A scedule of all such stuff and standerts of household . . . for to remayne contynually in the mansion house of me, the sayd John Smyth, called Smythes hall in Blackmore, &c., &c.

IN THE HALL. ffyrst a fayre joyned table with two trestelles joyned. Item, a thyck syde table wyth yoyned trestelles, fyxed in the grounde. Item, foure joyned formes. IN THE PARLOUR. Item a yoyned table wyth yoyned trestelles. Item, a yoyned table, chayrewyse, a yoyned cupboarde of wainscott. Item, a long forme yoyned. Item, a long settyll yoyned. IN THE BUTTERY. Item, two long seates to sett beare or ale upon. Item, a fayre almery\* with foure doers for breade. IN THE PANTERY. Item a breadbyn. IN THE GREAT CHAMBER. Item, a long framed table of deale bourde. Item, a square fflaunders table upon tryndelles.† Item a joyned table of weanscott, chayre wyse. Item, two cupboards with one stepp for potts. Item, two yoyned formes. IN THE CHAPPELL CHAMBER. Item a long setle yoyned. IN THE CHAPPELL. Item, one aulter of yoyners worke. Item, a table wyth two leaves of the passion, gilt.‡ Item, a long setle of waynscott. Item a bell hanging over the chappell.§ IN THE SECOND CHAMBER IN THE GALERY OVER THE KYTCHYN. Item, a long settyll yoyned of waynscott. IN THE CHAMBER OVER THE NOURSHERY. Item a long setle yoyned. IN THE HOTT HOUSE. Item, a lytle sestery|| of leade, wyth a cock of latyn. Item, a lytle cawdery¶ of copper, wyth a cock. IN THE BAKEHOUSE. Item, twooe fayre moulding bourdes wyth iii trestles. Item, a knedyng troughe in the boulyng house. Item, a bulting byn. Item, a barre of yron along the chymney wyth twoo rakks for potts upon the same. Item, IN THE KETCHYN. Item, two fayre dressing bourdes of woodc. Item, a greate barre of yron along the chymney wyth thre raks and two holes for potts on the same. Item, a cawdery and a pott hanging on a furneys in the boylng howse. Item, a fayre bourde wyth two trestelles. IN THE LARDER HOWSE. Item, a powdering tubbe\*\* wyth a cover. Item, a great long capous coope, in the kytchyn yard, covered with boordes. IN THE DAIRY HOUSE. Item, a ffurneys of copper to well why in. Item, a chese lathe or presse for chese. Item, thre chese breades. Item, a cherne for butter. IN THE BREWHOUSE. Item, a chestern to water in malt, lyned wyth leade. Item, a furneys of copper to brewe in. Item, a mashe safe. Item, a fayre worte pan of copper. Item, a great yeldyng fate. Item, a wourte fate. Item, a cooling fate. Item, a clensyng tubbe. Item, two settylles to sette beare on. xxij good kilderkyns. Item, a payre of slynges. IN THE MYLL

\* Almery, a locker or cupboard.

† Tryndelles—wheels or castors.

‡ Perhaps a triptych immediately over the altar on the two leaves of which the Passion of our Lord was depicted.

§ Query, is not this the bell which was in the possession of the late John Disney, Esq., President E. A. Soc. ?

|| Cistern.

¶ Cauldron.

\*\* A tub used for salting meat.

**HOUSE.** Item, a horse myll for two horses, wyth stonys. Item, and all other things thereunto belonging. Item, Matts layd upon the flowers of ten chambers. Item, all manner of syllyngs and portalles of waynscott with dores, wyndowes and locks. Item, all manner of boarded bedsteds in divers chambers amounting in number of ix. Item, the clock wyth bell unhangid.\*

The various items contained in the third schedule are divided chiefly amongst the testator's children, but a few are given to other relations. As there is a constant repetition of the same names after every item, with the proportion which each legatee is to receive, I simply enumerate the articles contained in the inventory.

### SCHEDULE III.

Hangyngs of arras,† fyrst iij lytle peces of hangings to hange over chymnes. Say. Item, v pec's of hanging lying unoccupied. Item, hangings of saye for iv chambers. Curteyns for beddes and wyndowes. fyrst of saye xxi pec's. Cupborde clothes of Dornix‡ tapystre and other. (41 pieces). Coverletts, divers sorts, olde and newe, xvi; verdour§ lyned v; and mantyll frees iiij. Counterpoyns. Arras, two. Tapestry olde and newe xv. Yet counterpoyns;|| of sylke and Bawdekyn,¶ two. Item, of velvet, one. Quylts, Item, of yellow sylke one. Celours and testers\*\* of velvet, payued wyth tynsell, one. [ten others enumerated.] Borders. Of saye one; verdour one. Item, of bockeram and canvas stayned, iiij. Item, of new stayned canvas, ii pec's. Beddes of ffethers, xx. Yet beddes, of downe, thre. Mattresses of fyne lynyn quylted, v; and course canvas, viii. Bolsters, fethers, xx, downe one, and fflocks iij. Blanketts of woollen and lynsey wolseye, xxi; and of ffustyan v.

**CHAPPELL STUFF.**†† Copes and vestments‡‡ thre. Aulter fronts,§§ foure. Corporace case,||| one; and dyvers peces of sylk necessary for cushyons, v. Thomas Smyth as moche as wyll serve hys chappell, the resydue to be solde by myn executours to the performance of my wyll.

\* Syllyngs, ornaments; more frequently used for wainscotted ceilings.

† Arras, a superior kind of tapestry so named from Arras the capital Artois, which was celebrated for its manufacture.

‡ Dornix, a coarse description of damask used for carpets and curtains; originally made at Tournay; called in Flemish Dornick.

§ Verdour, tapestry.

|| Counterpoyns, counterpanes.

¶ Bawdekin, a precious stuff introduced in 13 cent., said to have been silk interwoven with gold in a most sumptuous manner.

\*\* Canopies and hangings.

†† The sacred utensils of precious metals would be comprised among the plate, otherwise disposed of. The altar candlesticks (unless of silver) of which there would probably be but two in a private chapel where only Low Mass was said, are included no doubt with the latten candlesticks mentioned below.

‡‡ Vestments, chasubles.

§§ Aulter fronts, frontals or antependia: obviously white, red, green and violet proper to the Festivals and seasons of the Church.

||| Case for containing the Corporal or linen cloth spread over the Body (corpus) after the bread has been consecrated in Holy Communion. It was in use in the Church as early as the 5th century.



Sheets of course canvas, xxv payre; fyne canvas, ix payre; lenyn, v payre, and one berying sheet—xxxix payre and a shete Pylowberes\* of fyne, vi payre; and of course, ij payre—viii payre. Table clothes of fyne damaske, two; fyne playne diaper, one; course diaper, x; fyne playne canvas, xxij. Cupbourde clothes of fyne diaper damaske, two; other diaper, viii. Playne towells of fyne clothe, two; and canvas, xij. Napkyns, diaper damaske, one dozen; fyne playne diaper, xij; napkyns one dozen; x napkins. Yet napkyns, of canvas wyth blew rowes, x; playne canvas, vi; old playne, vi. Aulter clothes of canvas, one. Pewter, Basyns, Bolles and Ewers. Basyns and Ewers, silver fashyoned, three. Playne bolles, two. Chargers, silver fashyoned, thre; playne one. Platters, sylver fashyoned, one dozen two platters; playne, ij dd. ij platters; iiij dd. v platters. Dysshes of sylver fashyon, vi; corneryd, v; and playne dysshes ijdd. Porringers sylver fashyon one dozen; corneryd, vj; playne, vii—ii dd. j porringers. Sawcers sylver fashyon one dozen; and playne ij dd. v. sawcers iij dd. sawcers.† Trenchers, one dozen. Plates for chargers (vi in all) Candelstycks of pewter; sylver fashyon, iiij. Potts for ale, wyne, herbes, and chamber potts, xxii. Latyn candelstycks of latyn of dyvers sorts, xiiij Candelbeame‡ of latyn, large, one. Chafyngdishes of latyn, two. Chaforms of latyn one. Ladylles of latyn, two. Scommers§ of lattyn one. Andyrons of lattyn, very fayre, one payre. Braase and copper pannes of dyvers sortes, vi. Ffumynge pannes of lattyn, two. Potts of dyvers sortes, ix. Chaformes of dyvers sortes, iii. Spyce mortar wyth pestyll of yron, one. Yron raks, great, v. andyrons great and smale, vi payre. ffyer forks of yron, two; ffyer showells of yron, three. Tongs of yron, two payre. Gredryons of yron, iii. Spyttes greate and smale, xvii. Trevetts, great and smale, two. frying pannes, one. Dressing pannes, thre. Potthokes, thre payre. Backstocke for chymneys, two. A clock wyth bell to be hanged upp and to remayne at Smythes hall for ever. Beddsteddes of joynous worrk, xiii. Stoles joyned xvi. Chayres of dyvers sortes, vi. Close stoles, two. Chestes, wyth one of yron, and viii gardevyance§—xviii. Tabells yoyned, and other formes joyned, three. Hevy cupbordes, one.

Harneys, complete, lackynge legges, one payre. Almery ryvetts wyth splents and backs, viii. Item, one cote of fense covered wyth black saten. Item, jacks covered wyth whyte fustyan, two. Item, helmnett, one. Item, salletts, vii. Item, sculls|| covered wyth satyn, one. Item a mayle capp, one. Item, gauntletts and gorgetts, two. Bowes, iiii. Sheves of arrowes, iiii; pollaxes, one; halberds two; glayves, one; swordes, three. Item, one woodknyf gylt. Item, a quyver of shoting arrowes, to my sonne Thomas Smythe.

It is manifest from the tenor of the will that some of the testator's household effects are not included in the preceding schedules. The plate is omitted, inasmuch as one moiety

\* Pylowberes, or Pillowberes, still called in Essex Pillowbeys, Pillow-cases; also cloths for laying over the pillow chiefly of very rich material and embroidery.

† The Rood-beam in the Church was also so called from the great candles set on high candlesticks burning on either side of the Holy Rood.

‡ Skimmers.

§ Gardevyance, a chest, trunk, pannier or basket.

|| Skull-pieces or morions.

was given to the testator's wife absolutely, and the rest was directed to be sold. All the articles comprised in the second inventory were specific bequests, and the 'standerts of household' in the third schedule were to remain permanently in the mansion. These, however, undoubtedly comprise the great bulk of the household stuff. The armour was a specific bequest to the testator's eldest son and heir.

The length to which the present communication has extended, warns me to close; but should these notices of early wills and inventories prove acceptable to Essex archæologists, I shall be happy to continue them in future pages of our journal.

---

## THE SHAKSPERES OF ESSEX.

By AUGUSTUS CHARLES VELEY, Esq.

THERE were Shaksperes in Essex before and after the time of the Poet. I do not mean in the sense of "mute inglorious Miltons," but living and breathing bearers of that world-honoured name.

Having alighted on this fact—which, as far as I can learn, has not been noticed by any of the biographers—I have thought it worth while to place on record what is known concerning them, in case any future investigator should think fit to pursue the inquiry.

All that is known of Shakspeare and his family is, that he was the son of John Shakspeare and Mary Arden,—that he married Anne Hathway,—that his own descendants failed in the second generation,—that he had three brothers and four sisters, most of whom died young, and there is no proof that any of them left issue, except his sister Joan. Even the Christian name of his grandfather has not been ascertained, nor whether he possessed any more distant relations.

Such, however, is the interest attached to the name, that the individual considers himself fortunate who can add a grain or two of information to the slender stores at present existing. I can only flatter myself that, if I fail in this object, the collateral results of the search may justify me in trespassing for a very few minutes on your attention.

My office, as Registrar of the Archdeaconry of Essex, and the other Courts lately possessing testamentary jurisdiction in this county, gives me, till other arrangements are made, the custody of a series of original wills, probably far exceeding 50,000 in number, commencing about the year 1400.

Few have any idea how vast a store of interesting in-

formation is to be obtained from this source. The insight which the wills of the common people afford, as to their education—their religion—their family affections—their daily habits—their food and raiment—and even the furniture and arrangement of their dwellings—is surprisingly minute and accurate. And it was not without reason that they were described in a paper already printed in our “Transactions,” as “Rich repositories of archæological information.”\*

It is a fact which would scarcely be suspected, that the number of wills proved in a single year three centuries ago far exceeded the number at the present day, notwithstanding the great increase of population and wealth. But, in truth, every one who was “sick and weak in body, but of whole and sound mind, memory, and understanding, praised be God for the same,” and who was the possessor of what would now be deemed a very humble store of the commonest household goods, considered it his bounden duty to make a testamentary disposition of them. Perhaps, in Roman Catholic times, the presence of a father confessor helped to remind the sick man of the claims of the Church, and of “tithes and dues negligently forgotten.” Perhaps also, in later days, the imposition of a tax on probates and legacies operated, like the tax on hair powder, to extinguish that it fed on.

Before the Reformation, three wills out of four would begin in this fashion: “First and principally, I bequeath my soul to Almighty God, and to the Glorious Virgin our Lady Saint Mary, and to all the Holy Company of Heaven;” and the bequest of a portion of the testator’s worldly substance in payment of masses “for his soul, and the soul of his deceased wife, and for all Christian souls,” would form an essential and striking characteristic.

An example of this, carried somewhat to an extreme, is to be found in the will of Edward Brooke, of Bobbingworth, gentleman, dated 1545 [37 Hen. VIII.], who gives the following directions for his funeral, and for the customary commemoration, known as the “Month’s Mind” :—

“First, I will that four torches and four tapers be bought, and the

\* Notices of Ancient Wills, by H. W. King, Esq., vol. 1. p. 150.

same and none other to be spent and occupied at my burial and month's mind. Also, I will four poor householders and four children hold the torches and tapers, every man taking for their labour 4d., and every child 2d. And after my month's mind past, I will two of the said torches, and two of the tapers, to Bobbingworth Church; and I will the other two torches, one to Magdalen Church, and the other to Shelley Church; and I will the other two tapers be burnt in Bobbingworth Church, on the holy days at high mass, and at none other time. Item, I will four priests of my near neighbours, of my wife's election, and no more, but my Curate, and Sir Thomas, my son, and my cousin Maurice Chauncy, if he come; every of the four priests to sing those masses following, as they shall be appointed, that is to say, a mass of The Five Wounds of Our Lord,—and the Name of Jesu,—of the Trinity, with a memory of the Resurrection of Our Lord,—and of the Birth of Our Lord, with a memory of Our Blessed Lady, Virgin Mother to our Lord; with a collect for my soul and all Christian souls. Every of them having for his labour 8d., without meat and drink; and else 6d. with meat and drink, at my wife's election. My son, Sir Thomas, to sing a mass of the Ascension of Our Lord, with a memory of the Holy Ghost, with a collect for my soul and all Christian souls. My cousin, Maurice Chauncy, to sing a mass at his election: making him purveyor of the residue of the masses. The Curate's Mass of Requiem for my soul and all Christian souls. Every one of them having for his labour, 12d. Also, I think it necessary to prepare meat and drink, as well for the poor people, because they have no money, as for honest neighbours. And the poor people to have warning that they come not to my month's mind, for there shall be nothing prepared for them; nevertheless I will meat and drink be prepared for my neighbours that cometh thither. And as for the poor householders not to be at dinner at my month's mind, for my will is that 20s. in money be bestowed at my month's mind on this manner following, that is to say, every poor householder of the parish to have 4d.—the man 2d. and the wife 2d., in recompence of their dinners; and the rest of the said 20s., if any be, to be given accordingly to my poor neighbours householders nigh unto, at the discretion of my wife. Also at my month's mind, I will have no more priests, but my son Sir Thomas and my Curate, and I would they should be warned at my burial. And all other things, if any be to be done, I put them to the discretion of my wife, John Brooke my son, and other of my friends, so they be not excessive. And thus I give my soul to our Saviour Jesu Christ, our Lord God omnipotent, and my Saviour, my Lord and my God, in whom I believe."

A very few years changed the current of ideas on these subjects. We find in the will of William Leicester, in 1566, an elaborate confession of Protestant faith:—

"First, I give and commit my soul into the hands of Almighty God, Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Maker of heaven and of earth;—to whom I give thanks for my creation. And the like to Jesus Christ, my Lord and Saviour, by whose precious death and passion I feel in my soul free mercy, pardon and forgiveness of all my sins committed against the

Divine Majesty, in word, thought, or deed;—to whom I give thanks for my redemption. And also to God the Holy Ghost, by whose mighty power I was incorporated into the fellowship of Christ's congregation, and was made a lively member of the same, and the child of God by adoption;—to whom I give thanks for my regeneration and sanctification. And as concerning my body—even with a free heart and good mind I commit it to the earth whereof it came, nothing doubting but that I shall receive it again at the joyful resurrection of the just; but not as it is now, a weak, vile, and a mortal body, but a strong, a glorious and a immortal body, like unto the body of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, according to the working of his power, by the which also he is able to subdue all things unto himself. To whom, with Father and the Holy Ghost, be all praise, power, majesty and glory, both now and ever. So be it."

I might easily diversify these instances, and, perhaps, exhibit them in stronger contrast; but I pass on to other matters, merely remarking, that when trentals and obits were suppressed by law, the spirit of piety and charity displayed itself, as we learn from other contemporary documents, in "legacies given to good and godly uses," as to "the relief of poverty, to poor scholars, orphans, highways, marriage of poor maidens, and the like,"\* examples of which might be plentifully adduced.—The will of Nicholas Thresher (1567) contains a bequest not unworthy of present imitation—"Item, I give to the mending of *Childerditch* Church, ten shillings."

The anxiety evinced by testators that their earthly remains might rest with those who had gone before is another marked peculiarity. John Arthur of Much Baddow (1504) says, "Item I bequeth x li. to bye a stone to be layde upon me and my wyff; And I wull that it be graven upon the said stone, the pictor of a man and a woman, with all my children, and the iiij Evangelists of iiij corners, and an image of Owre Lady, with a rowle, therein wryten, '*O Mater Dei, memento mei.*'"

Sometimes the expression of this desire affords information of antiquarian interest, inasmuch as, in specifying churches and churchyards, the name of the *Patron Saint* is frequently given. I have noticed, among a number of instances which corroborate Newcourt's authority in that particular, a few in which information, wanting

\* Cardwell's "Documentary Annals," vol. 1, pp. 55, 360.

in his "Repertorium," is supplied by these documents  
—viz.,

Chignal Smeley .. ..	St. Nicholas.
Eastwood .. ..	All Saints.
Epping .. ..	All Saints.
Fobbing .. ..	St. Michael.
Hadleigh .. ..	St. James.
Horndon-on-the-Hill ..	St. Peter.
Ingatestone .. ..	St. Edmund King and Martyr.
Mucking .. ..	St. John Baptist.
Rainham .. ..	St. Giles.
Ditto .. ..	St. Helen.
Romford .. ..	St. Edward King and Confessor.
Shenfield .. ..	St. Mary the Virgin.
Thurrock Grays .. ..	St. Peter and St. Paul.*

Sometimes we obtain a hint towards fixing the dates of certain erections. John Stackwell, in 1503, bequeathed "to the byldyng of the new stepull in Chelmsford, x s." And Thomas Fuller, in 1547, desired to be buried in the parish church of Barking, "in the new aisle there."

Among other things, we learn the prices of various commodities. In the will of William Manning, dated 1541, the testator chronicles his debts to his "father-in-law, Kempe"—

	£	s.	d.
For a nag .. ..	0	13	4
For a bushel of wheat .. ..	0	0	10
For a bushel of rye .. ..	0	0	8
For two oxen .. ..	2	0	0

And while we observe the contrast between these prices and those of the present day, we find in another will of the same period (Francis Wyott, Esq., 1567), "a dozen of silver spoons which cost £7,"—shewing, as might have been expected, from the history of the currency, that the value of the precious metals, as measured in money, was much the same as now.

The possession of live stock is invested with prominent importance. We meet with "two beasts, the black with cut horns, the white pied,"—"a cow with a star in her forehead,"—"a red crumbled horn cow,"—"a cow called by the name of Gold," &c. And Miles Symonson, who

\* In Ecton's "Thesaurus Rerum Ecclesiasticarum" most of the above Dedications are given on the authority of Browne Willis, the well-known antiquary.

was Rector of Stifford in 1567, having appointed "Master Doctor Cole, Archdeacon of Essex," to be one of the overseers of his will, directed the said "Master Doctor Cole to have, for a remembrance of his good will, his grey gelding."

Then, again, the minute supervision with which the head of the family would portion a daughter with "a cow, six sheep, a mattress, a bolster, two pillows, six platters, two pewter dishes, two saucers, a brass pot, and two pair of sheets;" and a son with "all my apparel, as coats, doublets, hose, shirts, sword, dagger, bow, arrows, and girdles, and half a seam of rye to be delivered unto him the Michaelmas after my decease" (James Medcalf, 1566); the occasional cutting off of a luckless prodigal with the customary shilling; anxious solicitude for the care and custody of a granddaughter, "She being a Innocent and not able to govern herself" (Joan Ripon, 1567); injunctions to the widow, "to be careful and diligent to provide and see that our children be virtuously brought up in the fear of God and good learning" (Francis Wyott, 1567); and to the children, "to deal faithfully, lovingly and brotherly together, and to be ruled by the advice and counsel of their guardians;"—these, and numerous other points, omitting for the most part those which have been noticed by Mr. King in his paper before referred to, have occurred to me on a very cursory survey, and in abler hands would yield a rich harvest of local and general information and amusement.

I have brought with me two or three of the books containing transcripts of ancient wills. One volume in particular (Wyndover) I have selected on account of the hand-writing. Almost every will begins with an ornamental  $\text{I}$ .

"In the Name of God, Amen."

And the scribe, one Thomas Hopkins, whose skill deserves to be recorded, seems to have exercised a good deal of ingenuity in making no two of these initials alike. In a few instances, the exuberance of his pen, uncontrolled by the gravity of his subject, seems to have led him into the regions of caricature;—witness the fancy portrait at page 48, from which it might be inferred that, in the reign of



Queen Elizabeth, something bearing a strange resemblance to the modern crinoline was worn by the sterner sex.

Other books contain sundry odds and ends of information on the fly leaves, not always germane to the subject matter. There is a weekly record of "The number of all those that died of the plague in London," from the 7th of May to the 10th of September, 1563, "by John Osborne, Registrar of Essex," rising from 6 deaths in the first week, to 131 in the tenth, and 1,454 in the eighteenth, and giving a total of 5,779. There are also remedies for burns and scalds, as well as other ills which flesh is heir to, including "a very proved medicine for restoring of nature," of which one of the principal ingredients is "a fat sucking pygge."

With these preliminary remarks—which I hope will be pardoned if they have strayed a little from my professed subject, but which have been introduced in the hope of enlisting some one, with more leisure than I can command, to labour in the same vineyard—I invite your attention to the documents now on the table, and to the pedigree which I have drawn up to illustrate them.

They are as follows :—

I. The will of THOMAS SHACKESPERE, dated 26th August, 1557, (4 and 5 Philip and Mary). He is described as a priest, and he died about seven years before the birth of the Poet, whose father, John Shacksper, was at that time an "ale taster" in the borough of Stratford-on-Avon. The contents of this will are sufficiently interesting, even apart from any bearing on our present subject, to warrant its being quoted at length :—

"In dei nomi'e Amen. The xxvj day of August in the yere of owre lorde god 1557. I Thom's Shackespere priest beyng in parfyt memory praysy<sup>o</sup> be allmyghty god consideryng w't my selfe the fraylte of this lyfe And yt nothyng [more] uncertayne then ys the howar of dethe Do ordeyne and make this my testament contaynyng my last wyll in man'r folowyng ffyrst I geve and bequethe mysowlle to allmyghty god The ffather y'e son and the holly gost And to owre blyssyd Lady Sent Mary And to all the holly company of hevyn And my body to the erthe and to be buryed in xreten buryall It'm I geve to viij prests of Jesus commons\* wherin I now dwell beyng at dyrge and masse and to brynge me to my grave the day of my buryall and to reme'bar me when they saye masse xij*d* a pece It'm I wyll have xij ll tapars to brynge me to my grave & xij chyldern to cary them And eu'y of them to have for ther

\* Jesus Commons. A college of priests which stood on Dowgate Hill.

labor *ij*d a pece It'm I wyll that my executor shall geve the day of my buryall among powre people *xs* It'm I geve and bequethe to the mayntenance of J'sus comons to the use of the howsse *xs*. It'm I geve and bequethe to the sustars of Syon \**xli*. It'm I geve and bequethe to the ffathers of Schyne† *xli*. It'm I geve and bequethe to the obsarvant fryars of grenewyche‡ *vli*. It'm I geve to the blacke fryars of sent bartyllmewys smythefelde§ *vli*. It'm I geve and bequethe to the nunys of Kyngslangley || *vli*. It'm I give and bequethe to the parrysche churche of sent mylderyds in bredstret in london¶ towards the byeng of a pyxt or monstat to carye the blyssyd sacrament in on palme sonday and corpus x'ti day and other tynys neadfull *vli*. It'm I geve and bequethe to my brother Robart Shackspere *ijli*. *vjs*. *viiij*d. It'm I geve to my brother Harry Wyllson *ijli*. *vjs*. *viiij*d. It'm I geve and bequethe to my brother John Cooke *ijli*. *vjs*. *viiij*d. It'm I geve and bequethe to my syst'r grace Starke *xls*. It'm I geve and bequethe to my sust'r Jone Shackspere *xls*. It'm I geve and bequethe to sust'r Cycely Rychardson in case she be alyve at the tyme of my deccase *xxvjs*. *viiij*d. ou' and above *xls*. wyche I lent hyr husband in redy money. It'm I geve and bequethe to John Cooke of Jesus commons *ijjs*. *iiij*d. It'm I geve and bequethe to mother Angnys belonging to the comons *ijjs*. *iiij*d. It'm I geve and bequethe to good wyffe blowar my kepar *vjs*. *viiij*d.\*\*

II. The next is the will of JOSEPH SHAKSPEARE, or SHAKESPEARE, of Havering, dated 10th May, 1640, and proved on the 12th August following. There is a certain degree of quaintness in the brevity of this exordium—“First I commit my soul to God, my body to the grave, my estate to friends in form following”—which shows a compliance with the forms of the time, while it stands out in contrast with the long windedness which, as we have seen, sometimes prevailed. He gave 20s. to John Peachie, clerk, “to preach his funeral sermon at Romford.”

III. The will of SUSAN SHACKSPEAR, of Hornchurch,

\* The Sisters of Sion. Henry V. built a house at Isleworth, on the site of the present Sion House, for the nuns of St. Bridget.

† The Fathers of Sheen. Henry V. built and endowed the Carthusian Priory of Jesus of Bethlehem at Richmond.

‡ The Observant Friars of Greenwich. Henry VII. founded a Convent of Franciscan or Observant Friars at Greenwich.

§ The Black Friars of St. Bartholomew's, Smithfield. Here was a priory founded in the reign of Henry I., for the Augustines. After the suppression, Q. Mary granted the choir (adjoining to, and now forming part of, the Church of St. Bartholomew the Great) to the Black Friars, who used it as their conventual church during her reign.

|| The Nuns of Kings Langley. There was formerly a house of Friars Preachers at Kings Langley, which was assigned by Q. Mary to a prioress and nuns.

¶ St. Mildred's Bread Street. This Church was burned in the great fire of 1666, and the parish is now united to St. Margaret Moses.

\*\* The document in the registry is not the original will, but a copy. We learn from the report of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners, that in early times it was by no means unusual for the original wills to be returned to the executors after probate, leaving a copy only in the registry.

widow and relict of Samuel Shakspear, yeoman, deceased, dated 24th July, 1678, and proved 7th October following. She was the sister-in-law of the last named Joseph.

IV. The will of THOMAS SHAKESPERE, of Hornchurch, yeoman, dated 19th November, 1702, and proved 2nd June, 1703. He was the son of Susan, and the nephew of Joseph.

V. The will of SAMUEL SHAKESPEARE, of Romford, yeoman, dated 1st July, 1707, and proved 27th December, 1710. He was the brother of Thomas.

VI. The will of JOHN SHAKESPEAR, of Rawreth, yeoman, dated 2nd March, 1723, and proved 16th February, 1727. He was the grandson of Susan, and the nephew of Thomas and Samuel.

I am sorry to say that these wills are in themselves more barren of interest than the generality of their class; and it must be confessed that no light whatever is thrown by any of the testators on any subject connected with their illustrious namesake. My hope, as I unfolded one after another of these documents—that I might find some bequest of books or manuscripts—some allusion to heirlooms or relics—was doomed to disappointment. They appear (with the exception of the priest) to have been simple every-day yeomen, tolerably well to do in worldly circumstances, but not one of them able to write his name.

For the sake of comparison, I have prepared a pedigree containing, as I believe, all that is known of the Poet's kindred. A few of the Christian names are common to both pedigrees, such as John, William, Joan, Susannah, Judith, Anne, and Elizabeth; and although the dates do not absolutely preclude the possibility of the priest of 1557 having been an uncle, and the others descended from a brother of the Poet, yet the probabilities are all the other way. There is indeed a tradition that "One of Shakspeare's younger brothers lived to a good old age, even after the restoration of Charles the Second." Our Joseph Shakspeare, who died in 1640, might have been his son.

The spelling of Shakspeare's name has often been a subject of controversy. There is documentary evidence for at least nine different modes. I should despair of making

the distinction apparent to the ear, and I must therefore appeal to the eye :—

SHAKSPERE.	SHAKSPEER.	SHAKSPEARE.
SHAKESPERE.	SHAKESPEARE.	SHAGSPERE.
SHACKSPER.	SHACKESPEARE.	SHAXSPERE.

And the family under consideration seem to have been no less remarkable for the ingenious manner in which they contrived to diversify it. In the six wills before us, although it is clear, from internal evidence, that at least five of the testators were nearly and intimately connected, their names are spelt in six different ways, no two of them being alike :—

- |                 |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1. SHACKESPERE. | 4. SHAKESPHERE. |
| 2. SHAKSPEARE.  | 5. SHAKESPEARE. |
| 3. SHACKSPEAR.  | 6. SHAKESPEAR.  |

And in the grant of letters of administration which was made in 1731 to Judith Vassal, the sister of the last of the name, we have a seventh variety—

7. SHAKESPAARE.

One of these—No. 5, “Shake-speare”—corresponds with the mode in which the name was usually printed during the Poet’s life. Another—No. 4, “Shake-sphere” is suggestive, and I do not recollect to have seen it before. We might almost fancy that “Glorious John” had it in his mind when he made his Alexander

Assume the God,  
Affect to nod,

And seem to *shake* the *spheres*.

All the individuals of whom I have spoken resided at Romford, Hornchurch, Havering, and Rawreth, in this county; and it is probable that, if the registers of those parishes were searched, some further information might be gleaned. If the wills themselves had disclosed any trace of a connection with the family of the Swan of Avon, I should have applied to the incumbents of those parishes for their co-operation in the inquiry, and I am well assured

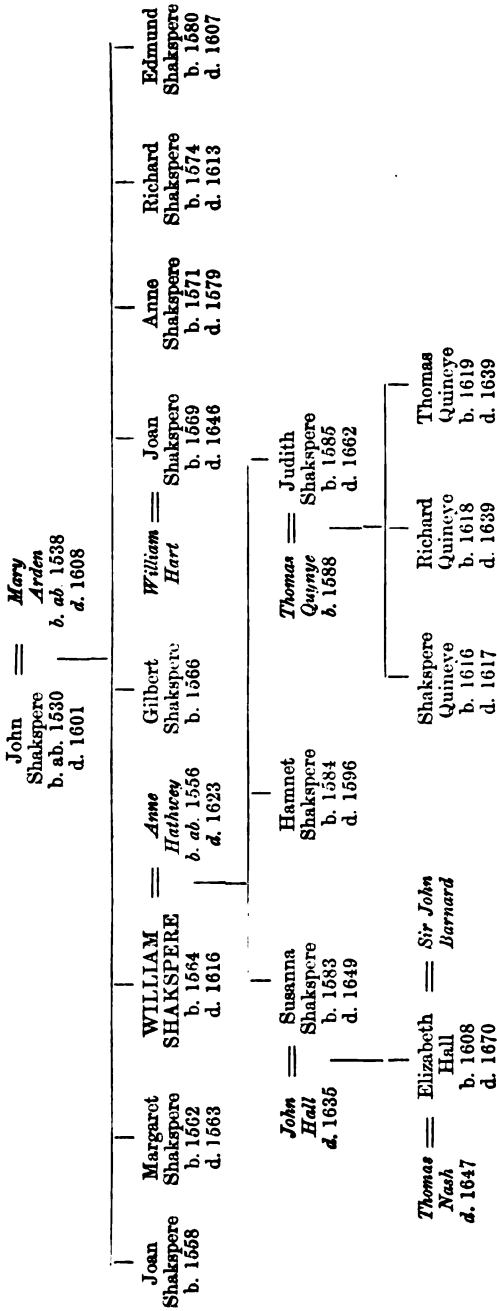
I should not have applied in vain. But I apprehend that, whether or not any such connection existed, I have only unearthed from their long repose a set of very ordinary mortals, who had nothing in common with the Poet but the name. Any one of them might have described himself, in the words of Corin, the shepherd, in "As You Like It :"—

"Sir, I am a true labourer ; I earn that I eat ; get that I wear ; owe no man hate ; envy no man's happiness ; glad of other men's good ; content with my harm ; and the greatest of my pride is, to see my ewes graze and my lambs suck."

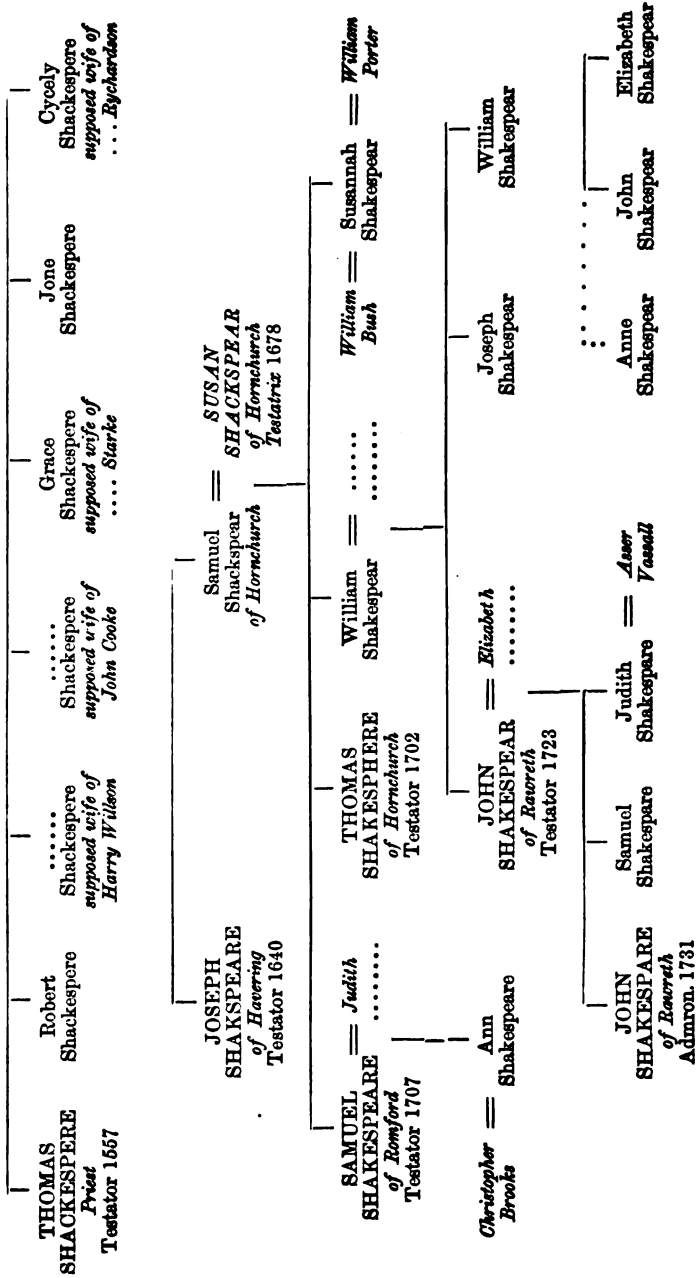
---



PEDIGREE OF THE SHAKSPERES OF STRATFORD ON AVON.



PEDIGREE OF THE SHAKSPERES OF ESSEX.







TRANSACTIONS  
OF THE  
Essex Archaeological Society.

---

ANCIENT WILLS.

(No. 3.)

By H. W. KING.

AMONG the ancient Essex families there is not one extant so long and intimately associated with the county and its history as that of Tyrell. With a descent dating from the Norman Conquest, when Sir Walter Tyrell, the founder of the House in England, obtained the Manor of Langham, they have flourished for eight centuries; and the long roll presents twenty-three Knightly Tyrells in direct lineal succession till the middle of the last century, when the main line terminated in two co-heiresses. We find, however, but little upon record relating to the family in Essex until the reign of Edw. II. or Edw. III., when Sir James Tyrell, the eighth in succession from Sir Walter, married Margaret, daughter and heiress of Sir William Heron. This lady brought the Manor of Heron to her husband: their son, Sir Thomas, in 1363 imparked 400 acres of land around the mansion, and Heron Hall thenceforth became the family seat, where the old knights lived in splendid hospitality for four hundred years. From the parent stem many branches sprang. 2. The House of Tyrell of Gipping, in Suffolk, whose descendants, I believe, still exist. 3. Tyrell of Beeches, in Rawreth, which expired in 1576. 4. Tyrell of South Ockendon, and Thornton in Buckinghamshire, raised to the Baronetage in 1627, which became extinct in 1749. 5. Tyrell of

Little Warley, which failed of heirs male in 1585. 6. Tyrell of Horndon-on-the-Hill, which died out in brief space. 7. Tyrell of Buttsbury, raised to the Baronetage in 1809, of which family is the present Sir John Tyssen Tyrell, Bart., the last and sole male representative, in Essex, of his ancient and honourable race.

Heron Hall from its antiquity, perhaps too from alterations or restorations at various periods since its erection, and from the fact that it was the residence of one family for so many generations, must have been one of the most interesting and remarkable domestic edifices in the county. Although standing almost within living memory, I have failed to discover that any plan, drawing or description of the mansion has been preserved. All that we possess is the brief, meagre and unsatisfactory notice of it by Morant, who merely says, "It is an old brick edifice, surrounded with a moat; on the outer side of which moat stand four towers, detached from the rest of the building. Great part of it is as old as the time of King Henry VI. or Edward IV." If we may accept the date assigned to it by Morant as authentic, it must have been rebuilt by Sir Thomas Tyrell, who died in 1476 (if not by his father), and this is, perhaps, not improbable; but it must be borne in mind that if Morant had no other evidence than the style of the architecture to guide him, upon such evidence the accuracy of his judgment must be extremely doubtful. Ancient English architecture was but imperfectly understood in his day, and the otherwise excellent historian was a very incompetent authority on this particular branch of his subject.

The mansion was demolished either early in the year 1789, or in the latter part of the previous year.\* Two of the towers remained standing long afterwards, but it was not until they became picturesque ruins that they attracted the attention of the artist, the antiquary or the architect, and they were first engraved to illustrate the "Beauties of

\* The old materials of Heron Hall were advertised for sale by private contract in the "Chelmsford Chronicle," March, 1789, described as, "All the remaining articles and materials of the mansion, consisting of sashes and glass, shutters, doors and linings, wainscotting, stairs and balusters, timber framing, a marble chimney piece and slab, stone piers, between three and four hundred thousand bricks at 12s. per thousand." Part of the materials and fittings appears therefore to have been previously disposed of.

England and Wales" in 1805.\* So long as the edifice stood intact it remained unheeded. Muilman, who embellished his "History of Essex" with numerous "neat-engravings" of country seats which neither command our veneration for their antiquity, nor excite our admiration for their elegance, excluded Heron Hall, which like Flemings,† and Jervis, and Crixea, and a hundred others, has been remorselessly destroyed without illustration and without record. The land has long since been disparked, not a vestige of the edifice remains, and a few traces of the moat alone serve to indicate the site.

But the destruction of the Tyrell monuments is more remarkable and more inexplicable than the destruction of their house. The demolition of the house was, perhaps, a necessity, the destruction of their monuments was a sacrilege. Very careful were the old knights, as we shall see, to provide for the due celebration of their funeral solemnities; they founded chantries and obits, they ordered fair tombs to be built "according honestly for their degree," and their successors fulfilled their pious intentions and enriched East Horndon Church with costly monuments and memorial windows. Nearly all have perished. If we had been left to simple conjecture, we should probably have attributed their destruction to Puritanical fanaticism and personal hostility to the venerable Cavalier "once decimated, twice imprisoned, thrice sequestered," and brought almost to utter ruin for his attachment to the Church and his allegiance to the King; insomuch that he commences his last will, though he survived the Restoration many years, with this touching direction:—"My body to be buried with little charge on account of my great sufferings." Owing to the calamities his allegiance had brought upon him he felt that he could not afford to be buried "according to his degree." But honest old Weever who wrote in 1631, and had visited East Horndon Church before that, disproves what might have been the not unfrequent assumption. After describing the monuments and inscriptions extant,

\* The towers are circular with conical cappings and in the engraving seem to be in the style of the 15th century. They stand apparently on the *inner* side of the moat, a more probable position than Morant assigns to them. An engraving in "Excursions through Essex," dated 1818, vol. I., p. 165, represents only one of them.

† Flemings was partly destroyed by fire; some habitable portion remains.

yet partly defaced, he says, "There be other funerall Monuments in this Church, erected to the honour of this familie ; but their inscriptions are all torne or worne out, and their Sepulchres like the rest, foulie defaced : These *Tirells* (me thinkes) hauing beene gentlemen for so many reuolutions of yeares, of exemplarie note, and principall regard, in this countrey, might haue preserued these houses of rest for their Ancestors, from such violation. But the Monuments are ansuerable to the Church, both ruinous."\*

So that whether in the zeal of 'Reformation,' or from whatever cause, nearly all the monuments in the church were despoiled while the family were resident. Since Weever wrote, the fenestral inscriptions, as well as those upon the tombs have been destroyed, with the exception of that in memory of Alice, Lady Tyrell upon the superb incised slab dated 1422.

For the purpose of endeavouring to resolve some historical doubts and of correcting some manifest inaccuracies, I have been induced to make a careful examination of the early wills of this family ; with the hope that at the same time they might, perchance, shed some light on the history of the mansion or furnish inventories of its contents ; and especially with the view to ascertain who were the founders of the singularly interesting Chantries which were the subject of an able and valuable paper, by our Honorary Secretary, the Rev. E. L. Cutts, read before the Society at the Chelmsford Meeting in 1861.

My endeavours, as far as I have proceeded, have not been altogether unsuccessful ; at all events some of the documents, independently of the more immediate object of my researches, are, I think, of sufficient general interest to be included in the present series of communications. The earliest will of one of the Tyrells of Heron that I have at present found in the Prerogative Office is,

THE WILL OF SIR THOMAS TYRELL, OF HERON, KNIGHT,  
OB. 1476.

He was the second son and heir of Sir John Tyrell of Heron, by Alice, daughter and co-heir of Sir William de

\* Weever's "Funeral Monuments," p. 658, Ed. 1631.

Coggeshall and Antiocha his wife,\* daughter and heiress of the renowned warrior Sir John Hawkwood, by Aufricia his wife, natural daughter of Barnabas, Duke of Milan. Sir John Tyrell was a distinguished soldier who served in the wars of King Hen. V., and, according to Morant, was afterwards Treasurer of the Household to King Hen. VI., and Sheriff of Essex and Hertfordshire in 1423. Sir Thomas Tyrell married Anne† (not Emma as Morant says in several places) daughter of Sir William Marney, of Layer Marney, ancestor of the Lord Marney.‡

Lawyers will know, though perhaps laymen may not, that it was anciently very usual, especially when the estate was large, for the testator to execute two wills, or, to speak more correctly, a Testament and a Will. By the first he disposed of the personalty ; by the second he devised his real estate.§ The more interesting is the Testament of Sir

\* Morant says that Alice, Lady Tyrell, upon the death of her husband remarried to John de Langham (Morant Vol. II p. 406). But surely this, even upon his own shewing, is impossible. John de Langham died in the year 1417 *viz* *patris*, yet Alice, Lady Tyrell, called by Morant his *first* wife, died in 1422. Besides if Sir John Tyrell were Treasurer of the Household to King Henry VI., that monarch did not ascend the throne till 1 Sept., 1422, and it appears further that Sir John served Sheriff of Essex and Herts in 1423, if indeed he is not the same who served also in the 9th of the same reign. Lady Tyrell lies interred with a sepulchral slab in East Horndon Church, and the inscription does not imply that she had a second husband. She was the mother of ten children while John de Langham it may be inferred died rather young. But if any doubt can possibly remain it is resolved by the Will of Sir William Tyrell of Beeches who mentions his father's second wife 'Kateryn.' Sir John Tyrell and Dame Katherine his wife, who are doubtless the same persons, were buried in the west wing of the Church of the Austin Friars, London. (See Stow's "Survey" p. 67, Thom's Edn.)

† In his account of the Marney family *sub* Layer Marney he calls her by her right name *Anne*.

‡ The Chantry erected on the north side of the chancel was most unquestionably for Anne, Lady Tyrell, daughter of Sir William Marney, although from the style of its architecture it must have been built many years after her decease. Over the entrance is sculptured the shield of Arms of Marney and within was an altar tomb inlaid with the effigy in brass of a female in widow's costume according exactly with the period of Edw. IV. The altar tomb has been destroyed but the brass effigy remains. I conjecture therefore that when this chantry was built the tomb and remains of Lady Tyrell were removed into it. Her husband as we shall see desired to be buried on the site of the Easter Sepulchre. His inscription was extant in Weever's time, as follows, Here lyeth Thomas Tyrell, sonne and heire of John Tyrell, knyght, and Dame Anne his wyff daughter to Syr William Marney, knyght, which Thomas deceysyd the xxii of March. . . . . There was also 'In the glasse of the East window . . . Tyrell, knyth, and Dame . . . and for al the soulys schuld be preyd for.

Prey for the welfar of the seyd *Thomas Tyrell*, knyth, of *John Tyrell*, knyth, *Alyce* his wyffe, and for all cristen souls

. . . . . the welffar of the seyd Dame *Anne* . . . . . ter of *William Marney*, knyth, and . . . . . and . . . . . *bet* hys wyffe and for all cristen souls.

§ Such real estate, that is, as was devisable, for prior to the statute 32 and 34 Hen. VIII., at Common Law, a man could not devise by will the lands which he had by descent, (except in certain Borough Towns, by custom) though such estate is frequently mentioned as descending to the heir. But lands held by purchase or for a term of years could be devised.

Thomas Tyrell which I here produce almost *in extenso*.

In the name of Almighty God, the fader the sone and the holy goost, and of oure blessed lady saint Mary the Virgin, of all the companye of heven, I Thomas Tyrell, Knight of the Shire of Essex, being of hole mynde the xvi day of the moneth of May the yere of our lorde god m'c'ccclxxv, and the xv yere of the reigne of oure leige lorde Kyng Edward the iiij<sup>th</sup>, afre the conquest, make my testament in articles as hereafter followith, Besechyng almighty god of pardone and forgiveness for all my synnes doon unto hym, his saints, and creatures, to whom I have offended; and also besechyng our lorde Jhu Criste to gif his grace to myn executours and feoffees that they truly execute, in asmoch as to tham belongeth, my testament and wyll to the pleasure of his pittefull mercy and grace. ffirst and principally I bequeath and recomend my soule to Almighty god, our lady saint mary and all saints of heven, and my body to be buried in the chancell of the church of Esthoredon in Essex aforsaide, under the place where the sepulchre is wont to stonde their,\* and I wolle that their be a tombe of tymber or of stone for me and my wif according honestly for our degree, and also a stone to be ordeigned for Sir William Tyrell, my sonne, with his Image, and the ymage of dame alianor his first wife theruppon, tobe made w<sup>t</sup> their Armes and scripture aboute tham, the which stone shalbe laide uppon his burying place in frere austyns of London.† Item, I wolle that all the detts which can be proved duly of right that I owe, shalbe wole and truly paied, and yf I have wronged anny p'sone or p'sones, and that be duly proved, I wolle that they and ev'y of them shalbe duly recopensed of my moveable godes; wylling also that due serche be made by my attourneys in my bokes and evidenc<sup>e</sup> wherth'with the truth may be pausitely knowen and understand in this behalf. Item, where I have in a boxe xij lres sealed lieinge to gider, sealed, by the which I am made a broth' of divers houses of religion, I wolle that w<sup>o</sup>t delaye after my deceesse the said xij lres be sent and delivered sep<sup>a</sup>tely to the houses that they came from, and ev'y house to have with the lre xx', and the hous of cristechurch of

\* That is on the north side of the chancel, near the altar, where the Easter Sepulchre was accustomed to stand. This was commonly a wooden erection as was obviously the case at East Horndon. It was an honourable and much coveted place for interment, usually, however, appropriated to the founder or first incumbent. Sometimes it was a permanent stone structure recessed in the wall, as at South Church and Runwell in this county, both of which contain tombs.

Sepulchral effigies carved in wood exist at several places in this county as at Little Horkeasley and Little Leighs, and no doubt both tombs and effigies of the same material were formerly more numerous; but if they were generally disposed of as a former Vicar of Messing disposed of the effigy of the founder of that church (and not very long ago either) it is not to be wondered at that they are scarce. The Vicar of Messing gave it to the parish clerk to be burnt for firewood as useless lumber! (Vide "Suckling's Memorials," p. 130.)

† In the long roll of Knights and Nobility interred in the magnificent church of the Austin Friars, enumerated by Stow are, Sir John Tyrell and Dame Katherine his wife; Sir William son to Sir Thomas Tyrell referred to in this will; Sir William Tyrell and Sir William his brother; and Sir James Tyrell of the family of Gipping in Suffolk, beheaded in 1502. It is hardly necessary to say that every grave has been violated, every monument destroyed, and the nave was granted in 1550 to a congregation of Dutch Presbyterians "for a preaching place." (Stow.)

Canterbury, where the holy marter saint Thomas lieth, to have delivered with the lre xl<sup>l</sup>, to thentent that the religious people of ev'y of the same houses, upon the deliverances of the said lres and bequests, shall pray sp'ially for me, and for Dame Anne my wife, my fader, my moder, and for all tham that god wolde I shulde pray for.\* Itm, I biqueth unto the Chirche of Esthornedon aforesade my vestymnt of blewe clothe of golde, w<sup>t</sup> the cope, and ij tynycles of the same, and w<sup>t</sup> thapparrell ; † and also a masboke, and a gilte chalice that Sir William Wylby ‡ yave thider to be praied for for ev'y sonday, and I woll that a remembrance thereof and of oth'r gode dedes be made in the saide masboke wherthurch the prayers may better bee continued. Itm, I biqueth to the v houses of ffreres in London to ev'y house x<sup>l</sup>, to thentent that the convent of ev'y of the same houses anon after my decease, doo syng a Trentall § for me and for my wife and for tho' that god wolde shulde be p'teners therof. Itm. I biqueth to the Chirches of the townes that I have livelode in, that is to say, Gyngraff, Dounton, lytyll Burstede, lytill Warle, Dounton, Buttsbury, Stokhanyngfeld, || Grayes, Spryngfeld, Shepereth, Melreth, Mulketon, Sople and Milton,

\* It was common for persons of all ranks and classes to make presents to Religious Houses and to be admitted in return to the Fraternity of the house ; which probably meant that they were enrolled on its books and were entitled to mention in its prayers ; perhaps to civility and hospitality if they visited the house and in some cases to interment after death. Thus the *Catalogus Benefactorum* of S. Albans Abbey contains a long list of such cases. Sir Robert Knollis, Kt., a Benefactor, had the fraternity, and Sir Bartholomew de Weedon, Rector of Shackreston, Leicestershire, another benefactor, was admitted to the fraternity at his earnest request. (See Newcome's Hist. S. Albans.) In the singularly interesting will of Sir Thomas Montgomery of Faulkborne, he says " I will that ev'y preste in Syon, Shene, Howneston and the Chartrehouse in London have xx<sup>d</sup>, praing them to remembre me accordinge to their graunte of brotherhode to me, and to say a masse and a dirige by note for me ; and also I will that such as be brethren and in the abite of any of the said housis, being no preste, and dwell ther, ev'y of them to have xij<sup>d</sup> to say placebo and dirige for the said sowlys."

† My Vestment of blue cloth of gold. By vestment as an ecclesiastical garment, in this sense, the chasuble is always meant. And thus the authorised vestments of the Church of England are described, when he that executeth the holy ministry is to wear a vestment or cope, *i.e.*, a chasuble when he celebrates the Holy Eucharist, and a cope at the altar service when there is no communion. This rubric was perfectly intelligible when it was framed, but long disuse has caused the distinction to be forgotten, and vestment and cope have either been interpreted as synonymous, or else it has been supposed that they might be worn indifferently ; hence at the last Coronation both the Archbishop and Dean of Westminster were vested in copes although the Prelate was celebrant. A set of copes of the 17th century belonging to the Dean and Canons of Westminster is kept in the vestiary of the Abbey ; and a very fine example of a post-Reformation Cope, richly embroidered, may be seen in the monumental brass effigy of Archbishop Harsnet (who died in 1631) in Chigwell Church.

It is noteworthy that the chasuble bequeathed to East Horndon Church and that bequeathed to North Bemfleet Church by John Tyrell of Beeches are *blue*. Blue is not an ecclesiastical colour, but it is the livery of the House of Tyrell, and as such the colour of the vestments worn by their domestic chaplains. The colour of the day or season, however, would be sufficiently marked by the apparels of the alb, whatever might be the colour of the chasuble. Church vestments at this period were often of very secular character, embroidered with heraldic badges and such like.

‡ Mentioned hereafter as Willoughby.

§ Trental. Thirty masses.

|| *Sic in Registro*, but Stock and Hanningfield are probably conjoined by a clerical error.



that is to say, to the chirche of ev' y towne of hem vi' viij sterling, and to the p'rysshens othe' iij' iiij<sup>d</sup> towards the chirche werks and the repa'cions of the ornaments of the chirches aforesaid, to pray sp'ially for me, my wife Dame Anne, and for all the soules god wolde shulde be praed for their; also I biqueth to the nonnes of Berking to pray in lyke wise for oth' soules aforesaid iii li. vi'. viij<sup>d</sup> and in lyke wise I biqueth to the Nonnes of Stratford\* iij li. to pray as is aforesaid; and to the freres of Chelmsford for a trentall to be doon as is aforesaid v<sup>t</sup>. Itm, I woll that yf I make nott up in my life tyme to the steple and new werk which I have bigon at Esthoredon aforesaid, that thanne myn executours and feoffees see that it may be made up and doon to the worshipp of oure lorde Jhu, and that it be made sure in such wise that the stepill fall nott dooun.† Item, where as the' hath been gadred of me and of myn houshold many yeres, certain money, whereof parte hath gone yerely to the fynding of the sepulchre light, I woll that myn Executours, to thetent that a gode Rule be hadde hereafter to the pleasure of god and for the soule that any thyng have given th'to, shall give and deliver of my godes to the fynding and contynuance of the saide light, v li. sterling. and I woll that all oth'r somes of money bilongyng to the saide light, and being in oth'r mennes hands, shalbe gadred and be deliv'ed unto humfrey Tyrrell and the othe', they to se that it may from henceforth be employed to the wele of the said light. Item, I will that my monethes mynd be discretely doon, and in soberwise; and I biqueth x li. to be disposed and deled by the discrecion of myn Executours where they shall seeme expedit and nedefulle to have my soule prayed for; but I woll also that an obite or anniv'ary for the soules of my fader and moder and my wife be wele and truly kept in the Chirche of Esthoredon aforesaid, yerely, duryng xv yeres, remembred in my wille of my londes, and that xiiij' iiij<sup>d</sup> shalbe employed thereuppon, yerly, dureyng the said xv yeres; and also I will that my houshold be kept at my cost by xiiij wekks after my decese; also I woll that all Bruyng vesselles w<sup>t</sup> tables, trestills, cupbourdes, stoles and fourmes be left still in ev' y place of myne, there to remayn and be occupied as thei have been used aforetyme. Item I woll that as soon as it may godly be doon after my decese, and atte ferthest w<sup>t</sup> in . . . † weks next after my dethe, a trewe inventorye to be made by myn executours of all my godes and catalls, and that they be consciensly praised, and theruppon I woll that all my goodes and catalles, movable plate, houshold, and all detts due unto me be disposed and employed for the contentacion of my detts and upon such recompenses as of right in my behalf owe to be made, and in beryng of myn ordinary charge and performyng of my legacies and execution of my testament and last wille, by the discrecion of myn Executours or of the more parte of them, as far as they will atteyne unto, &c.

Testator next gives to his wife part of his goods,

\* A small Benedictine Nunnery at Stratford-le-Bow, now S. Leonards Bromley, which held the advowson of the Church of Buttsbury where Sir Thomas Tyrrell had a manor and lands.

† Much of the work at East Horndon Church appears to date from this time. The rebuilding of the red brick tower must undoubtedly be attributed to the munificence of the testator, although the style may be well referred to a period at least twenty years later.

‡ *Hiatus in Reg.*

chattels, plate and household stuff to the value of 100 marks, with another hundred marks also assigned to her out of the sale of certain lands and tenements provided all the brewing vessels, &c., previously mentioned, be left in the places as before ordained. To John Darcy and Anne his wife 100s.\* He directs further that all his servants who have no fee specified in his will, shall have their wages, and be rewarded within thirteen weeks after his decease, and gives to

Ev'ry gentilman and woman of that degree, xx.s. and ev'ry yeoman and woman, and ev'ry grome, v.s. to pray for me and my wife and oth' as is aboveherced to be praied for, for the love they owe to god and also to me that to my power have been their lovyng frende.†

Item, I woll that John Stockers executours fulfillle the wille of John Edeney, and also save harmles for the same me and John Clopton and oure executours for that cause ; and that doon, I woll then they have delyvered unto them an obligacion made to me and to John Clopton for the same entent, by the said John Stocker, of iij li. for John Stocker had the goodes of Edeney so to doo. I woll that where' I am oon of the executours of Rauph late the olde lorde Cromewell,‡ and have had by delyv'ances of John leynton for parte of my costes and other dedes of Almes, by the space of xix yere, according to his testament, as written in my rede boke, the which, consideryng the long and troublous tyme that I and John leynton have suffred in that behalf, me semeth of reson to have that and also a rewarde ove' it, consideryng the grete rewardes that other have had for their labour and s'vice, and so, I trust, my fellowe executours woll se that I shall so have. Item, I woll that the V marcs which Byott toke to me to be disposed in highwaies, be disposed in high wey under the parke of the herne bytwixt Ingatt att Wounfrith and Bomyng Mille. Item, I woll that after my decease my boke called Barthu. de p'prietatibus§ be delivered to Esthoredon chirch there for to sue in perpetuete to have my soule, and the soules of my wif, and all xpen soules their, praied for. And also I woll that after my decease my boke called Legenda Sanctorum be deliv'ed to the said Church of Esthoredon, their to abide p'petuelly, to have my soule, my wif soule, and the soule of William Willughby, and all xpen soules praied for. Item, I woll that all such sommes of money and of legacies

\* John Darcy, sometimes called Thomas, married Anne daughter of Sir Thomas Tyrell. There were several intermarriages with the Tyrells and Darcys.

† These bequests convey some idea of the state in which a wealthy knight lived at this period, and of the character of his domestic establishment.

‡ Ralph, Lord Cromwell, Baron by Writ of Summons, died in 1455, s.p.

§ The work referred to is Bartholomæus "De proprietatibus rerum." Bartholomæus, commonly cited as Bartholomæus Anglicus, was an English Franciscan friar whose real name was Glanvill, of a good Suffolk family. He flourished in the 14th century and studied successively at Oxford, Paris, and probably at Rome. His work was a popular volume of encyclopædic knowledge comprised in 19 books, the first treating of God, and others in succession including the whole circle of created things. The work rendered him very famous ; it is found in numerous MSS. and after the invention of printing went through many editions and was translated into Belgic and English.

and all other mortgages as have com to my hands syn the dethe of John Leynton concernyng to my said lord Cromewell, I woll that they be delivered to my lorde of Winchestre and to the lord fforskewe.\* upon such discharge as shalbe lawfull to discharge myn executours, which some of money excedeth not . . . . † Item, to execute this my last wille in all things that is rem'bred herin, and in my other wille in all that belongeth to be doon according to myn entent in the said testament and will reherced, I make myn executours, Dame Anne Tyrrell myn wif, Thomas Urswyk, Knight, ‡ John Tyrell of Becches, Humfrey Tyrell, Robert Tyrrell my sonnes, Sir William Howard and Thomas Hotoft : § to be supervisours of my said testament and wille. I pray and desire my singular goode lorde the Erle of Essex, Sir Thomas Monngomerey, Knight, || Richard Hunte and John Tyrell, that they, or some of them, will take the labourer therof, or, if it might be, of the more parte of them, and woll that any of them so taking that labourer, shall be rewarded according to his diligence, Requireing you myn executours aforesaid and also my feoffees to remember myn entent, and to do for me as ye wold be doon fore to pleas god ; and theis to do, for charite I hertely pray you forgete me nott, that your charite may be the moor acceptable in the sight of our lord Jhu. In witness wherof the said Thomas Tyrell, Knight, to this my p'nte testament have setto my seale and syne manuell the day and yere abovesaid. Item I will that myn executours fynde a comenable and an honest preest by the space of xv yere next after my decease at Esthornedon Chirch, to pay yerely for his salary x marc, provided alway, that if my said wif wolhave the same preest to sing whercas her abidyng shalbe duryng her lif tyme or parte thereof, thanne I wolle myn executours abate yerely, duryng the same tyme that the said preest shall so syng and abide with my said wife, yerely iiij marc of the said x marcs and the said iiij marcs so retayned and abated by myn executours, to be employed to the fynding of a comenable preest by the longer tyme after the said xv yeres. ¶

The Will by which Sir Thomas Tyrell devises his real estate, consisting of manors and large possessions in Essex, Cambridgeshire and Hampshire, is a document of considerable length, and contains valuable information for

\* William de Waynflete, Bishop of Winchester, and Lord Chancellor, died 1486. Sir John Fortescue who became Chief Justice of the King's Bench in 1441 and Lord Chancellor towards the end of the reign of King Hen. VI. author of a valuable book entitled *De Laudibus Legum Angliæ* and other pieces.

† *Hiatus in Reg.*

‡ Sir Thomas Urswyk, Recorder of London died in 1479 and is interred in Dagenham Church with effigies in brass of himself his wife and thirteen children. Engraved in Mrs. Ogborne's "Hist. Essex."

§ Thomas Hotoft of a Hertfordshire family founded and endowed a chantry in Orsett Church. He died in 1495. An extract from his will bequeathing a parcel of land to the parishioners of Orsett is engraven in old English on a brass plate affixed to the south wall of the church.

|| For an account of Sir Thomas Montgommery and his family see Morant *sub* Faulkbourne.

¶ This assumes that Lady Tyrell would continue to maintain a chaplain, and undoubtedly there was a chapel at Heron.

the county historian, but as it is of but little general archæological interest I shall extract but one passage :—

I will that after my decease and during xv yere in Esthoredon Chirch iiij marcs in money under this forme, that ev'y week in the yere be disposed xijd. in almes to xij poore folkes by myn executours . . . and that the same poor folks have their mass, and say ower lady sawter for my soule and all xpen soules, that day that they have the almes, and that the almes be delt on friday and on the Saturday weekly, friday vij. saturday vd.

THE WILL OF SIR WILLIAM TYRELL OF BEECHES IN  
RAWRETH, KNIGHT, DATED 1470-1.

William Tyrell was the fifth son of Sir John Tyrell of Heron by Alice de Coggeshall, brother of Sir Thomas last mentioned and founder of the Beeches family. Morant could not find the date of his decease, nor in this instance does the probate occur in the Register. His death, however, may be assumed with tolerable certainty to have happened prior to 1475, as his son John, described as of Beeches, is named executor in the will of Sir Thomas. His will is written with his own hand and bears internal evidence that it was also drawn by himself, one among the many proofs that the country gentlemen were well educated in the so-called "dark ages."

It is dated 16th of March 49th of King Hen. VI. "and the newe taking upon him of his Royall power the ffurst yere and the yere of oure lord MCCCCLXX."\*

The last will and Intent of me William Tyrrell of Beeches in the shire of Essex Knight, written in a copy pap' o' this w' myn owne hande, then beinge in good mynde and reasonable helthe of Bodye, blessed and thanked mote be almighty Jhu.

There are some few interesting passages in the will, particularly that in which he expresses a desire in the event of the death of his two daughters to found and endow a school in the parish of Rawreth. These I shall extract.

They [his feoffees] and also myn heires male and their issue male, to be charitable that they and every of them shall yerely kepe my mynde day in p'teuite with a masse of requiem, and V di. be deled in Almes in w'shippe of the fyve woundes of o' lord Jhu, boithe in the Church of

\* In the Historical year 1471. Henry VI. recovered possession of the throne in October 1470 and resumed the regal title; the battle of Barnet fought 14th April 1471 again drove Henry from the throne and Edward the IV. reigned once more. Sir William dates his will within a month prior to that event.

Rawreth and in the pysshe Church of Pritelwell, and at that tyme in bothe places to remember the soules of John Tyrell, Knight, Alyce, Kateryn, hys wiffs, Anne, Dame Phelip' my wiffes, and my fader John Thorneburye,\* and all my good doers. . . . .

Testator directs certain tenements to be sold and the money appropriated as marriage portions for his daughters Jane and Anne when they come to the age of 16 or 18 years, respectively, but if both die before

. . . . . and yf it myghte be browght abowte, then I wolde have a conveyent place made ther [at Hawkes tenement] for a preest to dwell yn that cowde teche gram', and a howse made for the children of the cuntre to be tawght in, their skole here to be free, and the said preest to have for to singe for me in the churche of Rawreth, and to rememb', when he is disposed to singe, in his masse, to have in remembrance the sowlls of me, Anne and Dame Phelipp' my wyffes, the soule of my fader John Tyrell, Knyght, Alice and Kateryn his wyffes, and the soules of my Broder Thomas Tyrell, Knyght, Anne his wife, and the soules of John Thornebrough and Anne; and every ffridaye in the yere, weekly to sye in the churche of Rawreth, for the soules aforesaid, dirige, on the morowe a masse of requiem, but there be a resonable cause of lett, then I wolde the said preest should have the said tenement of hawkes so builded, w' all the app', to have xij marcs of money yerely, his resonable ffewell and candell, for to execute trewly this myn Intent and to make this sewre by the advyse of my said feoffees, executours and supervisours.

The Testator charged the manor and tenement of Plumberow with the maintenance for this Priest and Schoolmaster; then follow directions as to the feofment and the nomination of the Priest, who, if the feoffees were negligent, was to be appointed by the ordinary. If the intention could not by lawful means be fulfilled, the tenement and rent were to go to his wife for life, afterwards to his eldest son Jasper and his heirs, with remainder to John and his heirs. There appears to be nothing upon record to prove whether Sir William Tyrell's design were carried into effect; but if so, both school-house and endowment would probably have been swallowed up by some greedy courtier in the reign of Hen. the VIII. or his successor.

Sir William thus concludes his will,

All this afore written her' in paup' hyderto written w' myn owne hande, is for trowthe the very last will and yntent of me, William Tyrell

\* Father of the testator's second wife.

of Beeches in the shire of Essex, Knyght ; I sette this paup' my sygne manuell tyll y' may be wrytten on p'chemyn', and, furthermore, though this wrytting be not soo lawfull made as it owght to be, yet myn Intent what I meane may be clearly understood, and thereafter I wolle praye and requyre myn feoffees, Executo<sup>r</sup> and sup'visoures at ye rev'ence of the passion of o' lord Jhu, and in the waye of Charitye, to helpe to make it goode & lawfull accordyng to myn Intent ; And to see the execu'con of the same, w'tten w' myn oune hande, and sealed w' my seale of myn Armes, the day and yer' above said.

If not a new fact, it is one not mentioned, that I can find, by Morant, that this William Tyrell was a Knight. Although the orthography is more variable and uncertain than in most contemporary documents of the kind, written by scribes, it is a remarkably lucid and clerical instrument. It bears no attestation, neither is the probate appended in the Register ; but as it terminates at the end of the last folio this may be an omission.

THE WILL OF JOHN TYRELL OF BEECHES IN RAWRETH,  
ESQ. PROVED 23 Nov. 1494.

He was the eldest son of Sir William Tyrell by his first wife, Anne, daughter of William Fitz-Simon. Both Testament and Will contain much new and interesting matter, and illustrate strongly the religious feeling and habits of the age. Much information may also be gathered, from the value of the plate and household furniture, of the style in which the testator lived. It will also appear, I think, that he maintained a chaplain. I shall give the first instrument almost in its entirety.

IN DEI NOMINE, AMEN. in the worship of the holy and blessed trinite, Jhu criste and blessed Virgin Marie, and the holy company of heven, I John Tyrell of Beches of the grace of god hole in mynde & body the xvi daye of the moneth of Decemb' in the yere of owre lorde god m'ccccxxxiiij, and in the yere of the reigne of King Henry the vij make and ordeigne this my first testament as hereafter followeth. ffirst I bequeth and comitte my soule to almighti god my creato', to the blessed mayden marie, moder of Jhu, and to all the saints in heven, and my body to be buried in the church of Saint Nicholas in Rawrethen in Essex, where I am a parishen, or els wherin the parish church where I die. Itm I bequeth to the High Aulter of the Church of Rawrethen for tithes and offerings forgotten, due to my Curatt xx' ; Item to the parson of the church of Pakelsham for my tithes forgotten x'. To the Vicar of the Church of Canudon for my tithes v'. Item, to the parson of Reyley Church for my tithes xx<sup>d</sup>. Item I bequethe to the said chirch of Rawrethen my blwe vestment of

damaske or saten with th'appell and a tonckill, with other apparell, Dekin and subdekin, according to the said vestiment, and a cope to be bought by myne executours.\* Item I will that ev'y p'ste being at my burying, dirige and masse, have vi<sup>d</sup>; and ev'y clerk iiij<sup>d</sup> and ev'y poure man, woman and child j<sup>d</sup>, and mete and drinke. Item I will that within the moneth after my deth be deled in almes to poure people w<sup>in</sup> the parishes whers my livelode, in the hunderd of Rochford, Barstabel in Essex, lxvi<sup>d</sup> & viij<sup>d</sup> in money and in brede, chese, fleshe or ffysh to the some of lxvi<sup>d</sup> & viij<sup>d</sup> to the said poure people. Item, I will ther be kept no monthes mynde for me, but I wil that ev'y day within the said month, be said by som honest prest within the chirch wher I am buryed in dirige and masse of requiem for my soule and xpen soules, vi<sup>d</sup>. I will that w<sup>in</sup> the said monthes mynd be delivryd to ev'y hous of freres with (*sic*) w<sup>in</sup> the shere of Essex x<sup>s</sup> to my dirige and masse of requiem for my soule and all xpen soules. Item, I bequeth to the chirch of North bemeflete xl<sup>s</sup> to bye with a booke, or coope, or what they nedeth moost to goddes worshipp. Item, I bequeth to the making of the lane agenst Gatwards v li. that is my keping of Alson Scots. Item I bequeth to the making of hulbrigge in Essex xl<sup>s</sup> for Master Gryffith soule. Item, I bequeth to ev'y brother and sister of myne lyving a goblet of silver. Item I bequeth to ev'y of my servaunts in houshold at my deth a cowe or shepe, some more and sum of theym lesse, as they have deserved, after the discrecion of myne Executours. Item, I bequeth the best of myne aray for my body amonge my children and the Remnant of myne aray for my body as gounes, dowbeletts and hooses to be devided among my said servaunts. Item, I bequeth to ev'yeche of my god children lyving at my deth a ewe shepe. Item I bequeth to John Skulle, my (Servant?), xv Ewen. Item I bequeth to John Skulle the son that dwelleth w<sup>th</sup> me xx ewen shepe and ij kene. Item, I bequeth to Richard Charlton my s'vut xx ewe shepe and iiij kene and a horse. Item, I bequeth to Edward Tyrell my sonne xxli. worth of plate and xxli. worth stuff of household, Indifferently. [Testator next gives the farm 'aparatus' &c. being on the Manor of Beeches to his son William when 22.] To William Tyrell my son at xxij, (except xxli. of plate and the xli of stuff my wife to have,) and my son William to have as much more plate and stuff, that is xxli. of silver and parte gilte, and xl oxen or colts, or the money of them, when xxij; if he die, then same to my wife Kathrine Tyrell and my daughter Margaret Tyrell in equal porcions, and if they both die then I will that all that be deled and disposed in almes to poure people, making of highwayes and fynding of scolers to Cambrigge or Oxenford.

### A brief abstract of the ensuing passage will suffice.

To my daughter Margaret Tyrell £100 at her marriage or other preferment or finding or when 21. If she die before, then to William Tyrell my son unless he have inherited my lands, otherwise £50 to my wife and £50 to the making of bridges and highwaies in the shire of Essex and in Rochford Hundred.

'To my daughter Anne Tyrell a goblett of silver with a cov'nyng. Item, I bequeth to Maistres Ternaunt my bedys of L of white amber

\* My blue vestment of damask or satin with the apparel, and a tunicle with other apparel for deacon and subdeacon. See note p. ante.

(gaudred ?) of the same.\* To cosin James Fitzlowest† my litill englishe booke like a prymer [Residue of goods to his wife.] To Edward Tyrell, my sonne, my cheyne of goold with a crosse thereto. To North bemeflete chirch the owteside of my gowne of damaske to make them a cope or vestiment at their pleasure.‡ To my cosin, Sir Thomas Tyrell, my next best hors; and to my brother, Thomas Huntyngdon, a nother hors; and to my brother Jasper Tyrell a nother hors, or a colt." Appoints Executors, "My wife Katrine Tyrell, John Bardvile.§ Sir William Howard p'son of Rawreth, and William Aleyn my faithful lovers, praying them to do for me as I wold do for them, and if they take upon them the charge of Executors I give to John Bardvile lxvi' viij<sup>d</sup>, Willian Alyn lxvi' viij<sup>d</sup>, and Sir William Howard lxvi' viij<sup>d</sup>.

The following is a brief abstract of the will by which the testator devises his real estate. The endowment of a guild, or its existence in Rawreth Church seems to have been previously unknown. The obit which testator ordered to be kept was only temporary.

Give to my 'Katryn Tyrell' for jointure my whole manor of 'North bemeflete,' 'Portlonding mersh' in Canvey with appurtenances, and the advowson of the Church of 'North bemeflete' with wards, marriages, fines and woods thereunto belonging. Wife to receive profits of a tenement called 'Bawnes' in Southchurch as part of her jointure. She may sell the same for £ 26.13.4; Richard Stewynnes, of whom it was formerly purchased, to have preemption; otherwise to descend to my heirs by said wife. Whereas John Mexe holdeth jointly with me by copes of Court Roll of 'Moch Wakering' a tenement and 10 acres of land called 'Brigges' and a marsh with little hoppets and a marsh lying between 'Oxenham' and the 'mill pond,' called 'Brigge Marsh,' my executors shall surrender the said premises that the revenues and yearly profits shall go "to the maintenynge of the gilde p'ste found' of the visitacion of o' lady, kept in the parish Church of Rawreth, and yf in caas hereaftre it fortune the said gielde to breke and be not kepte in the sayd chirch as yt is now kept, then all the said tenement and land and other the profits shall go towards fynding and mayntenynge a p'ste to singe in the same parish chirch as ferre as it will stretch." My feoffees in lands, tenements &c called Gatwardes, Yones, Roddely, Hayes Cokks, and a croft that was Thomas Scotts and croft purchased of the heirs of John Rover lying beside Gatwardys tenement, Parkes, Shobewes, Mawgerys, Butteris, and Suttony's, lying in Rawreth, Hockley, Raley, Thundersley and Southchurch to pay to my Executors rents and profits till my son William be 22; "and to be divided yearly xx' to Dame Anne Tyrell, my daughter, being a nonne at the mynores w'out London," out of said lands as by deed. Executors out of said yearly profits to find yerely an obit for me in the church of Rawreth . . .

\* His Rosary. This appendage is often seen attached to the girdle in monumental brasses.

† Probably one of the very ancient family of FitzLewis of West Horndon.

‡ To make them either a cope or chasuble.

§ Most probably John Berdfeild of Margureting who died 15 Feb., 1497.



. . . and spend at the keeping of the same in dirige, masses, bread, cheese and drink and almes to poor people. 20s. as long as they receive the said rents. Give said lands to my son William ; Remainder to son Edward ; Remainder to heirs of my father. Give the lands called Smotts, Barnardyston's tenement, and three crofts called Hethonscroft, Culwerlsfeld, and Long Leylond in Hockley to my servant, Richard Charlton, and his heirs for ever. Will proved 23 Nov. 1494 by the Executors named.

Sir William Tyrell the eldest son of Sir Thomas, with whose will I have commenced this series, died during the life-time of his father. According to Morant he married Alianor daughter of Robert Darcy by Alice FitzLangley, and had by her Sir Thomas, a Knight Banneret ; Alice wife of John or Robert Rochester ; and Maud wife of Richard White. At this point the learned historian gets the descent into great confusion, though it is probable that to those who have not been accustomed to verify genealogical statements and to test them by ascertained data, the errors may not have been apparent. He first confounds this Thomas Tyrell with his grandfather, giving the date of his death in 1476, and of his Shrievalty in 1460 ; and the natural consequence of this is, that he confounds Thomas Tyrell, the next in succession, with his father Sir Thomas, the Knight Banneret, giving the date of his death in 1510. The error which occurs at p. 209 *sub* East Horndon is repeated in another form at p. 211, for although he says, correctly, that the next owner of Heron after Sir John was Sir Thomas, who died in 1476, he makes the latter to have been succeeded by his *son* Thomas who died in 1510, instead of his grandson.

The reader will find that the respective wills rectify Morant's inaccuracies most conclusively.

THE WILL OF SIR THOMAS TYRELL OF HERON, KNIGHT  
BANNERET, OB. 1510 (1512 ?)

He, as has been said, was the grandson and successor of Sir Thomas Tyrell who died in 1476, and the fact is expressly stated in his grandfather's ' will of lands.' Morant says he married first Elizabeth daughter of Richard Devereux, Lord Ferrers of Chartley. The same will proves that her name was *Anne* and that the Lord Ferrers then owed Sir Thomas Tyrell 400 marks for her marriage with his

grandson. His second wife was Beatrix daughter of John Cockayne, Esq., of Derbyshire.

The will is brief and bears date the 26th of Aug. 1510. Testator says,

ffirst, I comende my soule to Almighty god and blessed lady saint mary, and to all the holy company of hevyn, my body to be buried in the south side of the quere of the p'isshe church of Esthordon, and there by the discrecion of myn executours to be made a chapell w<sup>t</sup> a convenient tombe over my saide bodye to the charge and value of C m<sup>ks</sup> to be taken of my goods for bildinge and makinge of the seme, also I will have a prest to syng for my soule, the soules of Thomas Montgomery, Knight, Dame lore his wife, my frends soules and all xpen soules, ev'y soday and holiday in the said chapell or church where my said body shall rest duringe the terme of xxx<sup>iiij</sup> yeres next cominge, and the residue of the weks, not beinge sondaies or holidaiies, the said prest to singe and pray for the soules abovesaid in plac's to be appoyntd and assigned at the pleasure and discrecion of my son Thomas Tyrell; the said prest takinge for his wages as my son and my executours can w<sup>t</sup> him agree. Also I will that an yerely obite be kepte in the said pisshe church of Esthordon on the same day that it shall please god I shall departe out of this worlde, w<sup>t</sup> a convenient observance of my soule, the soules of the said Sir Thomas Montgomery and dame Lore his wife, as longe as it shall be thought reasonable by myn executours'. [Testator next gives his wife Dame Beatrice all title and dower she can claim of his lands and his manor of Hemmenales\* with appurtenances, and after her death the whole to remain to his son Thomas according to the old entail of the same] 'I will that the Man<sup>r</sup> of Rivenhall which late was the said Thomas Montgomery, Knight, be put in feoffment or record that yerely in p'petuite x m<sup>ks</sup> of the profits of the same shall be paid to the parson of ffalborn, and vijli. part of the profits shall go yerely in p'petuite to the vi pou' men at the newe abbey beside the towre hill in London accordinge to the last wille of the said Sir Thomas Montgomery :† and for the advoyson of the said maner of Rivenhall for as moche as the Abbas of Brewsarde in the countie of Suff<sup>r</sup> shewith sufficient evidenc's provynge the said advoyson to be longinge to her and her successors, how be it hath been long oute of their possession, yet I am content that they, by advyse of my councell and theirs, and by the councell of my lorde of oxforde, be restored to the same, they makinge by the advise of my said councell sufficient writinge that they and their successours shall yerely in p'petuite kepe an obite in their monastery for the soules of the abovesaid Sir Thomas Montgomery, dame lore his wife, and all xpen soules; and I woll that if it fortune John ffortescue and his wife to dye w<sup>t</sup>out heires of their body lawfully begotten, then the revercion of the said maners of ffalkborn and moche Teyé in the same countie of Essex whereof the revercion is in

\* Hemnals alias Tremnails; in Downham.

† The Cistercian House of S. Mary Graces or New Abbey upon Tower Hill. Sir John Montgomery built in it the Chapel of our Lady, in which he was interred in 1494.

my heires as by writinge thereof may more plainly appear, shall remain to my son Thomas and his heirs for ever.\*

[Gives to Beatrice his wife goods and chattels to the value of 100 marks ; 20<sup>s</sup> yearly rent to his godson Thomas Halys for life, or else £20 of his goods & chattels. Appoints Executors his son Thomas Tyrell, Robert Norwiche and Richard Wright Esquires, and "Richard ffaldringe my gostely fader and p'son of Esthordon" and gives each 13<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>. Thomas Tyrell & Richard ffalderynge proved 16 Oct. 1512.]

### THE WILL OF BEATRICE, LADY TYRELL PROVED 1512.

Beatrice Lady Tyrell, survived her husband but a short time and her will was proved four months prior to his. It is dated 14th Feb. 4th of Hen. VIII. and is very concise. She describes herself 'as Beatrice Tirell wedowe late wyff of Thomas Tyrell, Knyght.' It proves that she was a widow at the time of her marriage with Sir Thomas Tyrell. The following is a brief extract :—

To be buried where it shall please God. If I die in London to be buried within the Church of 'Crichurch'† or else in Bow Church in the city where John Sutton my first husband is buried : if elsewhere, in the parish church where I happen to die. Give to the Prior of 'Crechurch' and his convent for breaking my ground and necessaries thereto belonging, 40<sup>s</sup>, and to the Church works of Bow Church 20<sup>s</sup>. Residue of estate to William Browne, Alderman of London, and William Weston, mercer, to dispose for my soul as they shall think best and appoint them Executors (the former proved will). Give to each 40<sup>s</sup>. Appoint Thomas Terell my son overseer "takyng for his labor my best primer, my weddyng ryng, a crosse of golde w<sup>t</sup> a pece of the holy crosse therin, praiyng for the gyvers therof to me ; and a nother crosse w<sup>t</sup> salutacion of oure lady."

### THE WILL OF SIR JOHN TYRELL OF LITTLE WARLEY, KNIGHT. OB. 1540-1.

He was the eldest son and heir of Humphrey Tyrell Esq. of Little Warley Hall by his second wife Elizabeth daughter of Sir John Walwyn of Loundsford, Herts. He died 28th of February 1540-1 eight days after he had executed his will which is dated 20 Feb. 1540 (1541), and the introductory formulary is identical in its terms with other wills dated anterior to the Reformation. I insert here a brief abstract with extracts *verbatim* of the more interesting passages.

\* The matter contained in this extract appears to me to be quite new information.

† The Church of the Grey Friars in Newgate Street.

' I bequeath and comend my soule to Almighty God, and o' lady saynt marye and to all the saynts of hevyn, and my body to be buryed in the chauncell of litle Warley aforesaid before alhalowes w<sup>t</sup> a stone over me in lyke wyse as my father humfrey Tyrell lyeth in Esthorndon Church. . . . Item I remit the charge of my burying to the discrecyon of myn Executours w<sup>out</sup> pomp, wayne glorie, or grete coste. Item, I will that my monthes mynde be kept in all the pysh churches followith, Esthornedon, Childerdich, grete Warley, Orsett, Hornedon, Langdon, Donton, Hotton, Chauldwell, flobbing, Gyngrave, and graysthorrok, and the churchwardens of ev<sup>y</sup> of the say<sup>d</sup> pysshes shall have vi<sup>ij</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>; to bestow to every prest of the said pysshes to say dirige and masse for my soule and all xpen soules viij<sup>d</sup>, and in brede, drinke & chese enough for the pysshens's vi<sup>ij</sup>; yf any be left of the say<sup>d</sup> vi<sup>ij</sup> to be for the repa'cions of the church. Item I give and bequeth to the repa'cions of the church of little Warley xx<sup>s</sup>, and I give to the said church all the clothes that be usyd about the sepulcar every year.'

[Give my daughter friswith 100 marks at her marriage or living sole. To Stephen, Morris and Humfrey my sons 5 marks yearly for life out of my lease of Thorndon Hall. To my son Morris £20. To my son Rauff according as I am bound to Mr. Randulff of Kent (which I suppose is 200 marks) when 21 : if he die before, nothing. To my son William 40<sup>s</sup> yearly out of Thorndon Hall during my lease.] " Item, I bequeth to Mary my doughter sometyme a nonne of Barking a ring with a safier that my wife hath in keping, and a counterpointe, a fetherbed, a bolster, a pillowe, a payr of blankets and fyve marks in money.\* Item I bequeth to Elizabeth Hopton my wifes daughter xl li. on condicyon that neither I nor my executours be troubled or vexed about any thing conteyning the will of John Hopton Esquire her father. Item, I bequeth to Dame Anne Tyrell my wife, foure fetherbeddes, iiij bolsters, iiij pillowes, iiij payer of sheets and four counterpoyns, wherof one ys in the myddell chamb' and three in the closet over the p<sup>l</sup>or, and a salte w<sup>t</sup> a cover w<sup>t</sup> stone and perle, and three coffers to be appointed by the discrecyon of myn executours, two dozen napkyns, six towells. [To William Wortington my son in law £10 : an inventory of my goods to be made. Goods to be sold. To Margaret Tyrell my daughter £6.4.4. Appoint John Tyrell my son, Humfrey Tyrell my brother, and Anthony Brigge my son in law, Executors. They proved 19 Mar. 1540 (1541).]

I have been careful to avoid overburthening these communications with the mere dry recital of the devise of manors and lands. No species of evidence, however, is more authentic in relation to the descent of estates than that to be derived from wills, and to these instruments any future historian who would correct the inaccuracies and supply the numerous defects of Morant must of necessity have recourse. My chief object in these papers is to select

\* This magnificent foundation, Barking Abbey, was dissolved 14 Nov., 1539. Miss Tyrell was therefore living on the pension allotted to her. The Abbesses of Barking were usually women of noble family or high extraction, and the nuns, most probably, were daughters of distinguished or affluent parentage.

such passages as serve to illustrate the habits, manners, religious feeling and social condition of our forefathers, and, if so be, to trace to whom we owe the foundation and frequent restoration of our religious edifices. Half the domestic history of the country lies buried in and may be drawn from ancient wills, and I hope to bring out in continuation of the subject, and in excerpts from others, many interesting facts and particulars which I trust may contribute to our better acquaintance with the history of the past and the people of the past in their social and domestic relations.

---

## THE STRANGMAN PEDIGREE.

By H. W. KING.

ALTHOUGH it is not perhaps generally desirable to occupy the limited space afforded by our Journal with genealogical tables, I venture to think that an exception may be made in favour of the Pedigree of the Father of Essex History. I frankly own, at the same time, that I feel unwilling that the results of researches which I have diligently prosecuted during the space of more than a quarter of a century with the hope of discovering some particulars of the life and history of a man to whom we, as archæologists, owe so much, should be utterly lost, however inadequate they may be to the labour bestowed. Such scattered notices and obscure traces of James Strangman as I had found at long intervals I have previously recorded in a brief memoir in these pages.\* Few and indistinct as they are, I fear that they are all that will ever be obtained. My endeavours to trace his genealogy have, however, been attended with unusually successful results, and it will not, I think, be regarded as an inappropriate supplement to his scanty memoir.

Very recently, by the friendly aid of G. H. Rogers-Harrison, Esq., Windsor Herald, and member of our Council, I have been enabled to continue the genealogy upward from the time of Edward III. to the Norman Conquest; and my thanks are further due to Mr. Harrison for the facilities afforded me for collating my own collections with the Books of the College of Arms. To Colonel Chester I am also indebted for kindly assistance, and some new and valuable discoveries and excerpts from ancient records.

That a descent deduced from an origin so remote will be entirely free from errors or defects is more than I will

\* Vol. II., p. 139.

venture to affirm. In those cases where I had recourse to genealogical collections or early copies of Visitations, when discrepancies occurred, I had to decide what I should accept and what reject on the evidence presented to me, and to verify what I could by original records. Much I have, of necessity, been obliged to accept upon trust from other compilers hands, on the fair, if not the almost certain presumption that they possessed, or obtained access to, evidences which are not now in existence. For the selection and application of the materials at my command, I am solely responsible, and have used them to the best of my judgment.

At my last revision I have seen reason to adopt as the basis of the Strangman Pedigree a descent compiled in Latin by Vincent, Windsor Herald, in the reign of Charles I. This I have collated with others. Vincent has the reputation of having been a man of great ability and equal industry, a plodding antiquary and a judicious genealogist. Besides his office of Windsor Herald he was under-keeper of Records in the Tower, an appointment which afforded him unusual facilities for research of which he did not neglect to avail himself, for he made a great collection of extracts.\* His compilation therefore bears the stamp of authenticity. Some interpolations in a later hand have been rejected, either as partly erroneous, or incorrectly applied, and other insertions substituted from records of undoubted authority.

The Pedigree which I now present to the members of the Essex Archæological Society has not been hastily put forth, and if not entirely free from inaccuracy, is as perfect, as after long study and careful collation, I have been capable of making it.†

Whether the family were of Saxon or Norman extraction cannot be determined, for from the Conquest until the reign of John or Henry the III. the name occurs only under the Latin form of Peregrinus. If I may hazard a conjecture, it seems more probable that the founder of the house was one of the Norman followers of the Conqueror called

\* Vide Noble's "Hist. of the College of Arms."

† Morant's narrative pedigree and those contained in such transcripts of the Visitations as I have seen, commence temp. Edw. III. The reader will find very considerable variations from the text of Morant which is based upon or copied from an unauthenticated transcript of the Visitation of 1612 or 1614.

perhaps William le Pélerin, thence Latinized 'Peregrinus,' and subsequently translated 'Strange-man,' the surname borne by his descendants in Essex, Kent, Cambridge and Lincoln; while another was Anglicised 'Peregryn.\*'

Although the Strangmans occupied the position of landed gentry for the space of five hundred years and their possessions were large, the name does not once occur in the roll of Sheriffs; hence I infer that their property and influence were insufficient to entitle them to serve that office, which was usually conferred upon persons of the highest consideration and wealth, and these in Essex were numerous. Neither have I found the name among the Magistracy, though I am not sure that I have seen a list of Justices of the Peace earlier than the reign of Elizabeth. In the antiquity of their lineage, the distinction of their alliances and the number of quarterings they displayed in their shield, they nevertheless rivalled those of the highest rank.† This will be apparent on referring to their genealogy, and for the purpose of shewing what ancient families they represented in blood, and how most of their numerous quarterings were acquired, I have included the descents of several of the more considerable heiresses.‡ But he in whom my interest has centred during this long protracted investigation, is James Strangman, the approximate date of whose death and age is at length determined. He was, as will be seen, the fourth son of William Strangman by Mary daughter of Sir Thomas Barnardiston Kt., a name which still survives in Essex. Vincent, who was his cotemporary and probably knew him (as well as Camden and Dethicke with whom I have formerly shewn he was well acquainted) distinguishes him in his pedigree by the appellation of "Antiquarius" and says that he died in 1595 or 1596. The will of his father is dated 5 Dec., 1573, and was proved 19 June, 1574. Bartholomew his eldest son and heir was of full age and appointed Executor.

\* Thus, e.g. Peverell is Latinized *Piperellus*; Rivers, *De Ripariis*; Montagne, *De Monte Acuto*; Beauchamp, *De Bello Campo*; Beaupre, *De Bello Prato*; and many other examples might be cited which must be familiar.

† They quartered 21 coats, the greatest number, with one or two exceptions, that I have met with among the county families at that period.

‡ The Doreward Pedigree I have drawn exclusively from Morant as sufficient to exhibit the descent from that family. The descent of Mantell, Battaille, Atte-Hoo and Yngoe I have drawn from MS. Pedigrees and other records, collated with the Books of the Herald's College.

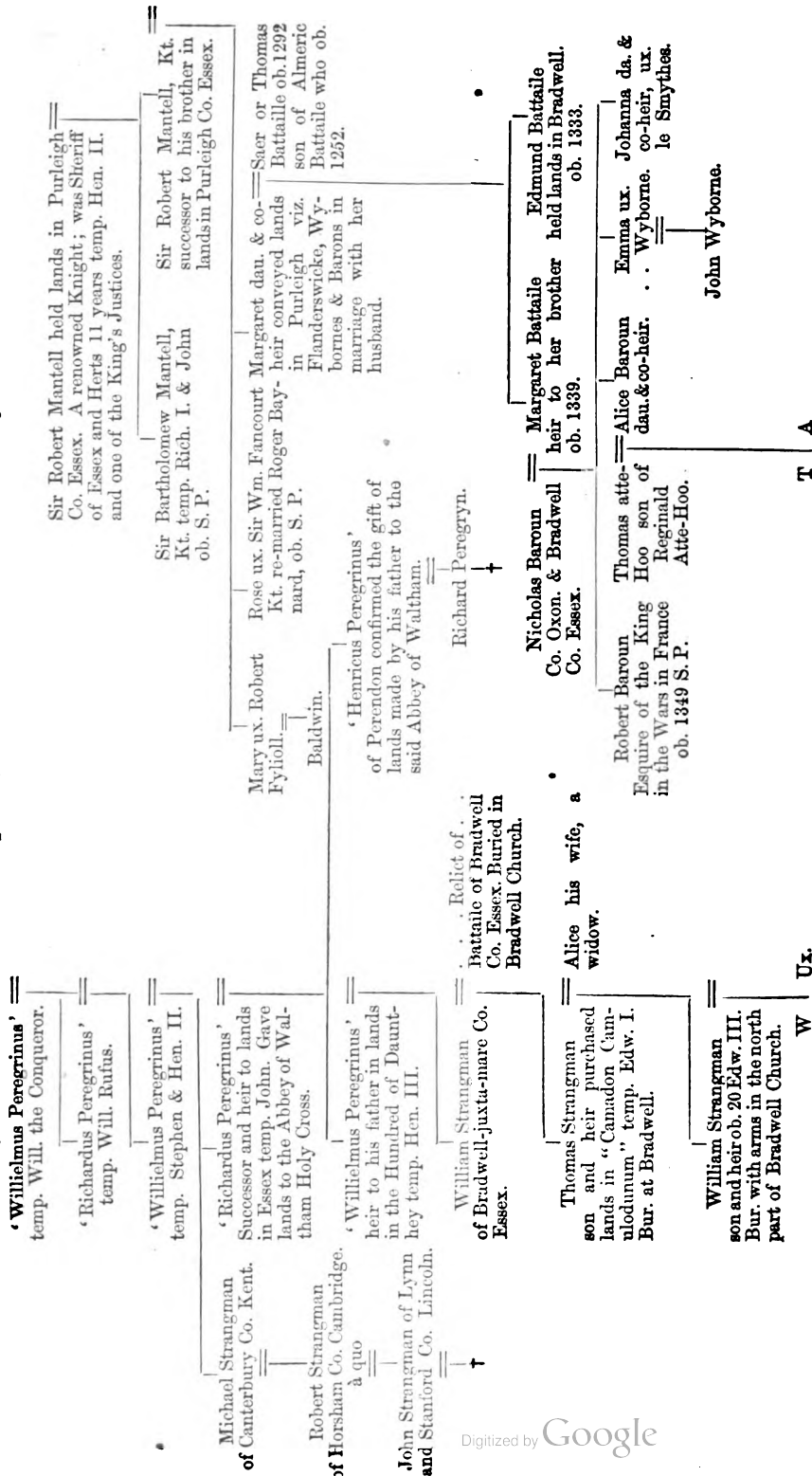


James is expressly mentioned as a minor. The greatest age therefore that can well be assumed for James in 1573, is 18 years, as there were, according to the pedigree, two sons born between Bartholomew and him. Upon this supposition he could not be more than 40 at the time of decease and may have been several years younger. To Bartholomew, his father bequeathed all his lands, leases, stock, &c., who was to be charged with an annuity of £20 to his brother James and with the payment of a further sum of £200 on his attaining the age of 21 years. This was the entire fortune of the Antiquary. Reckoned according to the value of money in the reign of Elizabeth it was not an inadequate provision for the younger son of a country Squire, but sufficient to place him in a state of honourable independence. The fortune bequeathed to his daughter 'Thamysand' was 500 marks. Thomasine was also a minor, which proves that she could not have been born of his first wife, and the error into which Morant and other genealogists have fallen, is that of making Mary the sister of Sir Thomas Kemp, William Strangman's first wife, instead of his second. As the testator does not mention his daughters Ann and Martha, they were probably then married and had been provided for. Martha Wiseman at all events was living as late as 1604, when Administration was granted to her "*De bonis non, &c.*" of her said father. To his brother (in-law) John Barmston (*i.e.* Barnardiston) William Strangman bequeathed 40s. yearly for the space of six years, if he should live so long.

There are strong reasons (amounting almost to positive proof) for believing that upon the death of Robert Strangman, the eldest son and heir of Bartholomew, this ancient family after having flourished more than five hundred years became extinct.

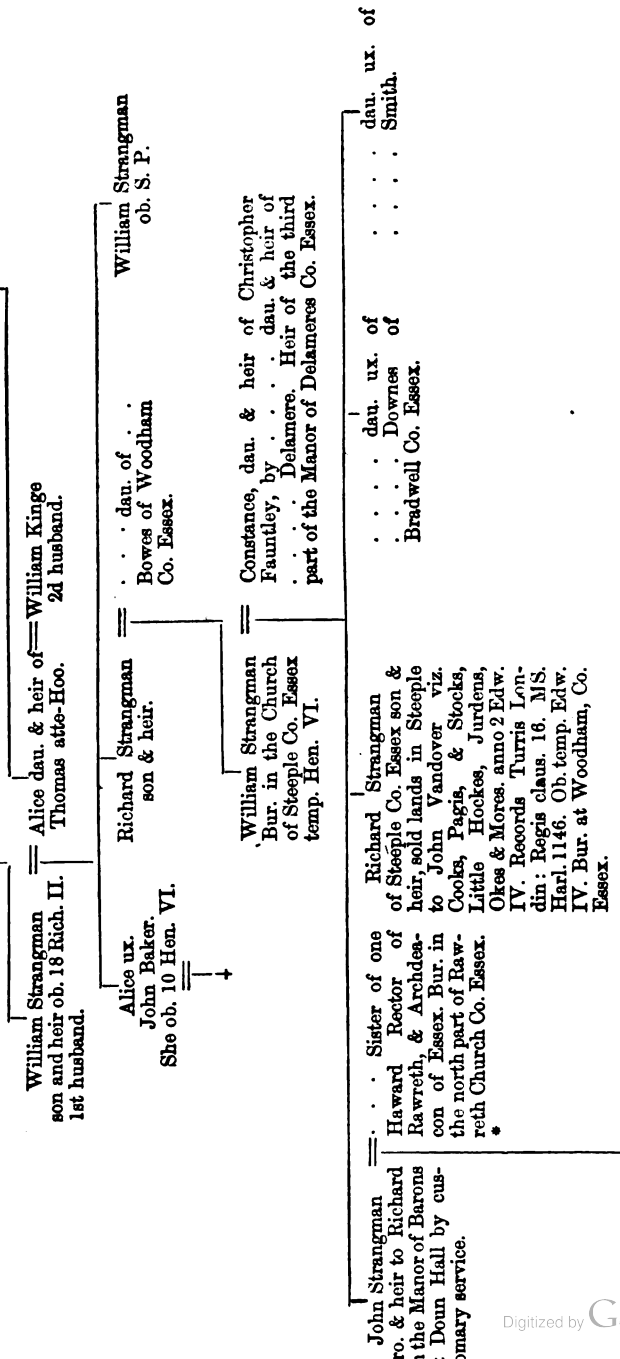
---

**PEDIGREE OF THE FAMILY OF STRANGMAN v. STRANGEMAN OF HADLEIGH AD CASTRUM IN THE COUNTY OF ESEX.**  
*Drawn from the Heraldic Visitations, Inquisitions, Wills, and other Ancient Records, by H. W. KING.*



W = Ux.

T = A



John Strangman  
 of Hadleigh Co. Essex  
 eldest son & heir.

J Ux.

\* Probably William Howard, inducted Rector of Rawreth 23 May 1472; resigned in 1476, and was succeeded by John Newcourt, D.D.; and perhaps the same William Howard who was again inducted in 1481 on the resignation of Dr. Newcourt and died in 1504. Neither Haward nor Howard occurs in the list of Archdeacons of Essex at this period; yet the entry in the pedigree is very circumstantial, "Sepulchus in Borecalibus partibus Ecclesie de Rawreth." His tomb does not now exist.

John Strangman of Hadleigh Co. Essex, Esq.; and sister & heir of Henry Yngowe. at 20 in 1522. Essex, Gent. 2nd son. (See Yngoe Pedigree.) Lancaster, had many states by his wife.

Mary dau. of Robert Yngowe of Hadleigh Co. Essex, Gent. 2nd son. Edward Strangman of Hadleigh Co. Essex, Gent. 2nd son.

Margaret dau. of William Roberts of Bradwell Hall Co. Essex. Thomas Strangman of Rayleigh Co. Essex, Gent. Relict of Augustine Heron.

Ann ux. of Henry Bode of Rayleigh Co. Essex. Henry Strangman ob. S. P.

John Strangman of Rayleigh Co. Essex. Agnes Relict of William Herry Esq. Elizabeth ux. John Harkey of Wilts Co. Stafford.

Anna ux. Thomas Salt of Youghall Co. Stafford.

Richard. Thomas. Robert. Elizabeth.

Francis Strangman of Hadleigh Co. Essex, only son & heir. Will dat. 4 Aug 1551. Provd 1557. *Inquis post mort.* dat. 3 & 4 Phil. & Mary. Bur. in Hadleigh Church. Bequeathed his estates to his cousin John Strangman. ob. S.P.

William Jenny als Jenyn 1st Husb. Mary dau. ob. 16 & bur. 28 May 1571 in Church of S. Benet Gracechurch Street London at. 57.

Edward. John. Thomas.

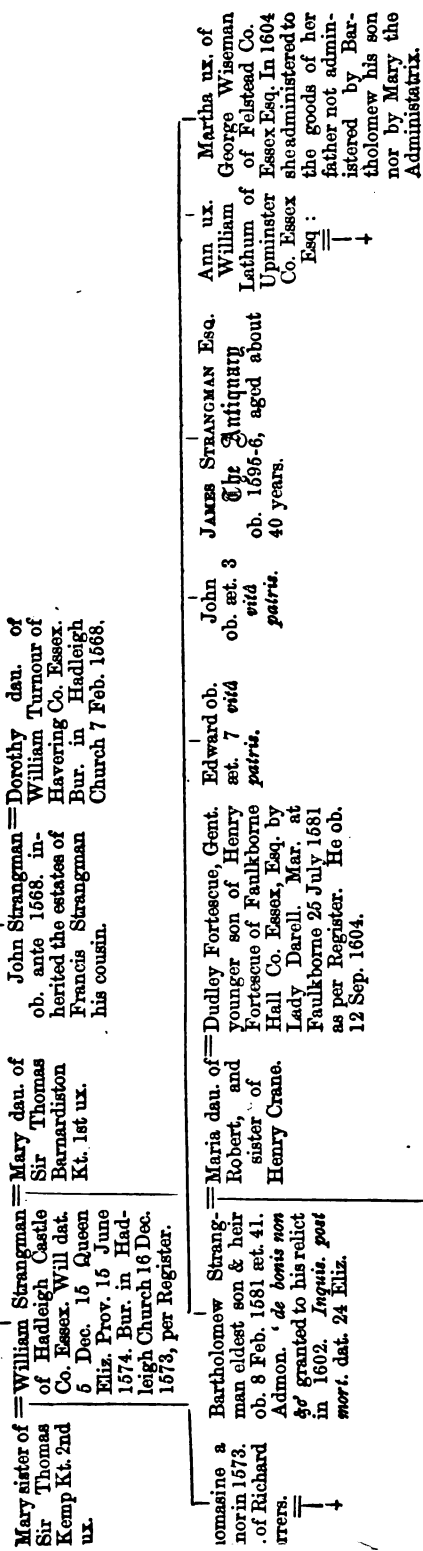
Henry = Cooke of Rochford Co. Essex Esq. 3d Husb. Henry = Cooke of Rochford Co. Essex Esq. 3d Husb. Jane ux. John Blyattat. 36 in 1577. Philippa Johanna Margaret Alice ux. Lewis ux. John ux. John ux. John ux. John ux. Bipland Pilborowe at. 34 in Rochford at. 29 in set. 19 in 1557. set. 29 in 1557. 1557.

Mary. Edmond.

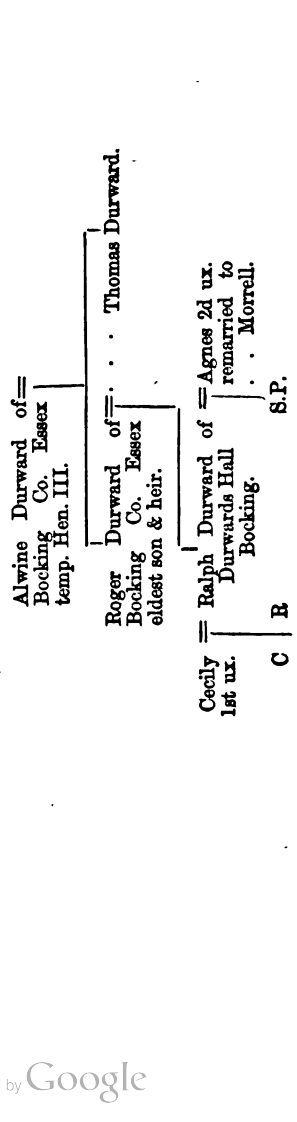
William. Edward.

Susan.

Richard. Faith. Elizabeth. Eleanor.



PEDIGREE OF DURWARD v. DOREWARD AND YNGOE.



William Durward = Joan only dau. and heir  
of Bocking eldest  
son and heir.  
way Co. Essex.

Roger.

Catherine = John Durward of = Isabella dan. of John  
Bocking eldest son & = Baynard of Messing  
heir ob. 12 Nov. 1420. Co. Essex. Bur. in  
Bur. in Bocking Ch. Bocking Ch. 2nd ux.  
S.P.

John Durward or Doreward of Bock- = Blanch eldest dau.  
ing Co. Essex Esq. A great Lawyer. of Sir William de  
Speaker of the House of Commons Coggeshall.  
1st Hen. V. Sheriff of Essex and Hertis 1460. Bur. in Bock-  
ing Ch.  
in 1425 & 1432. ob. Jan. 1462 or  
1466. Bur. in Bocking Church.  
Will dat. 25 Aug. 1456.

Joane ux. of  
Sir Richard  
Waldegrave  
Kt.

Eleonora ux. of  
John Knyvet Esq.

Elizabeth ux. of  
F. Chamberlayn.

... = Robert = ... dan. & heir  
of ... Maiden of  
Pagalaham Co.  
Essex.  
secondly to ...  
Darcy. (2nd ux)

John Yngoe ob. in the  
 Fleet Prison London.  
 Bur. in the Church of  
 the Carmelites.

Nicholas Yngoe,  
 Esquire Bur. in S.  
 Epulchres Ch. Lon-  
 don [one MS. says at  
 Welbesa.]

Robert Yngoe Esq. Bur. = Elizabeth dan.  
 in the Lady Chapel of and at length co-  
 heir of Richard  
 Doreward Esq.  
 Lower Hill. Will dat. 6  
 Dec. 1500, Pr. 24 Jan.  
 1501. *Inquis. post mort.*  
 at 29 Aug. 1522.

Henry Yngoe  
 only son ob.  
 S.P.

Mary Yngoe dan. & heir  
 *Wai. post mort. patris.* ux.  
 of John Strangman of Hed-  
 eight Co. Essex Esq. in 1622,  
 then at. 20. (See Strangman  
 Pedigree.)

Richard Doreward of Barking Co. = Joan youngest da.  
 Essex. Esq. 3d son. and coheir of Sir  
 Roger Arsicke of eldest son & heir  
 South Acre Co. ob. 1476.  
 Norfolk.

Richard Doreward.  
 Mary ux. of John  
 Wingfield of Denham  
 Co. Norfolk.

a dan. ux. of a dan. ux. of  
 . . . Guilford. . . Walsing-  
 ham.

Ann dan. & William =  
 co-heir of Dore-  
 Thomas ward Esq  
 Urswick 2d son  
 Esq.

John Doreward Esq. John Doreward = Margery Elizabeth ux.  
 ob. 1480. at. 26. S.P. of Spatus Hall dau of of William  
 Gt. Yeldham Co. John Fotheringay.  
 Essex ob. 1495. Nanton  
 Esq.

Margaret ux.  
 of Nicholas  
 of Beaufre Co.  
 Norfolk. She  
 ob. 10 Feb.  
 1513.

Elena ux. of  
 Henry Thurs-  
 bie Esq. He  
 ob. 10 April  
 1532.

S.P.

S.P.

ROMAN SEPULCHRAL REMAINS AT EAST HAM,  
 READ AT THE MEETING AT LEYTONSTONE,  
 HELD FEBRUARY 16th, 1864.

By the Rev. E. F. BOYLE, Vicar of East Ham, Essex.

*East Ham, Barking,  
 July 23rd, 1864.*

SIR,

In assenting to the request that my short paper should be included in your forthcoming number of the "Essex Archæological Journal," I have to repeat what I mentioned to one of your Secretaries, viz. : that in my opinion it does not deserve to be so dignified. As a truthful and exact description of the facts I can safely put it before you, whilst no pretension is made to a knowledge of the special subject which these facts illustrate.

*No further remains have been found in the excavations here.*

I remain, Sir,

Faithfully yours,

E. F. BOYLE,

*Vicar of East Ham, Essex.*

TO THE EDITOR

OF THE  
 "Essex Archæological Journal."

---

THE part of this evening's proceedings which I have undertaken is of a nature so simple, that any one of common observation, whose evidence is credible, could readily undertake it. And I must confess at once, that if archæological knowledge were necessary to set before this present meeting the facts relating to the discovery so recently made in the parish of East Ham, it must have devolved on some one more competent than I profess to be to relate them. But if I confine myself to facts and offer nothing of my own, I believe I shall best consult for that

very interesting branch of knowledge which this county Society is instituted to promote.

It is well known to the Society, for its own records testify, that a very curious little church, the parish church of East Ham, of considerable antiquity—in whose churchyard lie the remains of the great antiquary, Dr. Stukely—stands on the confines of the marsh which stretches from the river Lea on the west, to the river Roding on the east, terminating at Barking Creek. Along some miles of this level the new gigantic sewer, called *the high level sewer*, which is to carry off the drainage of London north of the Thames, traverses this marsh. So large is the embankment required for the sewer, that it became necessary for the contractor of the works to purchase four acres of land close to the sewer, to excavate gravel for ballast, to line the sides of it for some miles. It so happened that the land most suitable for his purpose was to be had within about a quarter of a mile of East Ham church, and in a direct line with the churchyard, westward. This land was to be carried away bodily, except the surface of eighteen inches, and is now being daily carried away on trucks, for the purpose of ballasting this mighty sewer; a work in comparison with which the Roman *Cloaca Maxima* was a moderate one; that being a single channel 14 feet in diameter, built in dry masonry; while this consists of three co-ordinate channels of nine feet diameter, built of the best bricks, and beautifully cemented. In the process of excavation the workmen, on Friday, the 13th of November last, came unexpectedly upon what they thought was a large block of stone. On further uncovering, this stone proved to be hollow. It was more than two feet square at the end which came first in sight, and it had a coped lid of more than five inches in thickness. When wholly uncovered it proved to be a large stone sarcophagus or coffin, apparently of coarse Bath stone, the lid being broken, when found, into three parts. Within this sarcophagus were two skeletons, lying at opposite ends, one larger and more entire than the other. A skull was at each end, and in one the teeth were nearly complete, the entire skeleton, indeed, being very perfect. A surgeon who saw these stated his belief that they both belonged to



persons of about forty-five years of age. When first found, one of the skeletons was entire and but little decayed. This was still the case when I first saw them. The police kept guard for two or three days and nights to watch, on behalf of the Crown, lest any *treasure trove* should be unlawfully abstracted. This surveillance will prove what a sensation must have been caused in the neighbourhood by the discovery; it was given up, however, on the third day, when it was tolerably well ascertained that no treasure was contained in the sarcophagus. Whilst still in its berth, the monster coffin was seen by some hundreds of sight-seers, especially on Sunday, the 15th of November, 1863. After a few days the numbers became inconvenient to the workmen. It then became a question what was to be done with it. I offered the use of my church porch for its temporary resting-place, as I knew that many persons still, desirous of seeing it, had not had the opportunity. Accordingly it was placed in the porch, and I hope several hundred persons of the neighbourhood and from London had a quiet and sheltered view of what all confessed to be a most interesting relic. Meanwhile other coffins were being discovered, but these were of lead. Three leaden coffins, in all, have been found as yet, lying north and south, as the sarcophagus lay. About twenty cinerary urns were also found close to them. Persons skilled in such matters pronounced both the stone and leaden coffins to be unquestionably Roman. Certain marks and mouldings, it seems, are indicative of their Roman origin, although no date whatever could be traced. Escalop shells of beautiful device are on the lid of these leaden coffins, at the head, foot, and sides of each, and an astragal moulding runs diagonally across them. In short, every antiquary who saw them readily pronounced them to be Roman. I have, fortunately, been able to preserve for your inspection this evening impressions of the escalop shells and of the mouldings, and some specimens of pottery used as cinerary urns. Some of these are of Roman, others of British manufacture, found near the coffins, and containing, when found, the ashes or fragments of bones. These urns have fared very ill indeed under the mattocks and pickaxes of strong armed navvies, such as are found in all our great

public works. No recompense was then offered for the preservation of any of them, and I do believe they would all have perished, had not a few non-antiquaries, such as I am, been ready with a few half-crowns to rescue what seemed to our unlearned eyes to be at least great curiosities. Your hon. secretary has now authorised me to reward the men if they shall preserve, intact, any more relics that may be found, if they should still be found ; a measure, I humbly suggest to this Society, most necessary in this age of excavations, for securing such antiquities as may be dug out from the soil of Essex, a county second to no other for its deposits of Roman sepulchral relics.

The Board of Works claimed and exercised the right to dispose of these remains. And so, after leaving the coffins, at my request, for six weeks longer than they at first intended, to be seen by the inhabitants of the neighbourhood, they have been taken away to be deposited, as I am informed, in the British Museum. I only wish that a little more care had been taken of the contents of the stone coffin, and that they had not been disturbed. Two sacks full of the dust contained in it were taken away, and one of the leaden coffins was thrust into it, thus destroying the leaden coffin, and confounding its contents with those of the sarcophagus. It is easy to perceive how much more valuable, as an object of antiquarian curiosity, the unutilated and undisturbed contents of such a coffin would be, if we had them now to show. Regrets are useless, however. Only, it shows my present hearers how needful it is for a county Archæological Society to have eyes in all parts of the county, and a reward ready at hand for those workmen who shall be at the pains to preserve and hand over such objects of interest as may be from time to time discovered. Such moderate reward, I mean, as would operate as an inducement to take a little extra care.

Some antiquaries have expressed their belief that these discoveries are but the commencement of still larger discoveries in the same place. Others have said that this was probably but a small burial place, perhaps belonging to a single proprietor and his retainers. Time will soon prove whether this be true or not, for the excavation is

rapidly advancing. But I am bound to say that for several weeks no further discovery has been made.

At an early period of the discovery I wrote to the honorary secretaries of this Society, announcing what had then been found. The Rev. Mr. Cutts promptly engaged to send a competent person to view, and another to sketch the coffins, as they lay in our church porch. Those drawings, no doubt, will be reproduced in the way of engravings in an early number of your "Essex Archæological Journal." And I hope your honorary secretaries will give us the advantage of their descriptions in the letter-press.

The honorary secretaries of the "Archæological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland" also heard of the discovery, and though unwilling to thrust their sickle into the harvest of another society, asked permission to view the relics. This, you may believe, was freely granted, and they too concur in pronouncing the remains to be Roman.

Before dismissing the subject, I must mention that bones were found in considerable quantities near the spot where these coffins were exhumed. Some few of these are preserved, but not in sufficient quantity to satisfy a curious inquirer. One fact only need be mentioned to indicate their sepulchral character, viz.—that they were found at the same depth as the coffins and urns; and two skeletons were found in a tolerable state of entireness. They were far below the reach of plough or harrow, and in so regular a disposition as to lead an observer to the obvious conclusion that they were the remains of human beings, perhaps too poor to afford either a coffin or an urn.

The Roman occupation of Britain, if we date it from the second invasion under Agricola, lasted from A.D. 84, to the early years of the 5th century. The shortest time, therefore, we can reasonably assign to these Roman relics would be 1,400 years; and the probable date of their burial would be farther back than that. Having reappeared after the lapse of so many centuries, and comparatively well preserved too, in their gravelly bed, capable of identification as to their nationality, it is surely well worthy of the care of a learned body such as yours to take every precaution for the future that such,

or similar, relics shall be seen as soon as may be after their discovery, and accurately drawn or photographed for the illustration of your journal.

If I might venture to define the object of your Society, I should say yours is pre-eminently an association for the recovery of authentic traces of the footsteps of Time. It is not an enthusiastic search after the romantic or the fictitious, but an exploring of facts, patient in investigating, and faithful in expounding them when discovered. Permit me, in conclusion, to say that if you wish to succeed largely in collecting the facts which concern the past, you must do two things:—First, you must increase considerably the numbers of your subscribing members; this will be necessary as explorations advance: and secondly, you ought to enlist the services of those who are competent and trustworthy, all over the county, to seize upon the facts as they come to light. As railways, tunnels, sewers, and embankments are proceeding to turn up the bowels of the earth, strange things will crop up to view. But then the question is, Who will care to have them preserved? Who is trustworthy to record the discoveries? Your hon. Secretaries, it is clear, cannot be everywhere present. The Magistrates of the county might, in some cases, take an interest in these matters. But they are not so equally spread over all parts as might be desirable. You will probably anticipate my thought—the Clergy are the body who are more equally diffused over the country than any other body of men who are as well informed. And I hope I am not assuming too much for my own order when I suggest that they, with all their many avocations, would be as willing as any other set of men, to undertake the duty of describing the genuine remains of antiquity, each in his own respective neighbourhood. Scotland, it is well known, is better described in its statistical and geological features than other parts of Great Britain, for this very reason, because the clergy there take pains to inform themselves of the facts in their respective parishes, and to communicate their information to the public.

---

## COMPARATIVE NOTES ON THE ROMAN SARCO- PHAGUS AND LEADEN COFFINS DISCOVERED AT EAST HAM.

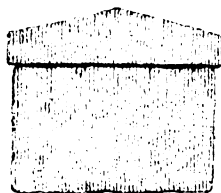
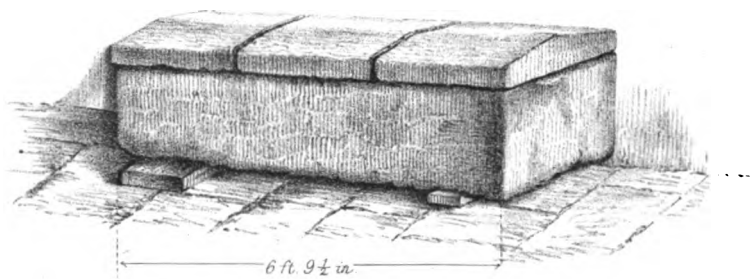
By H. W. KING.

THE preceding communication from the Rev. E. F. Boyle, to whose careful observation, judicious counsel and active exertions for the preservation of the interesting sepulchral remains exhumed at East Ham we are so greatly indebted, furnishes our associates with a detailed report of the discovery, and a description of the various antiquities brought to light; the accompanying illustrations, engraved from the beautiful drawings of that accurate and accomplished draughtsman, Mr. A. F. Sprague, to whose minute and scrupulous fidelity I can bear testimony from personal inspection, render any description from my pen superfluous. My duty is simply, in compliance with the request of our Honorary Secretary, to lay before the Society some notes of similar discoveries in Essex and elsewhere, in illustration of, and for the sake of comparison with, this so fortuitously made.

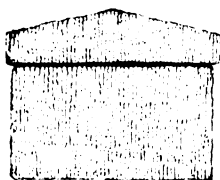
The subject of Roman interments in coffins of lead and stone has been so amply and ably treated by Mr. C. Roach Smith in his "Collectanea Antiqua,"\* vol. iii., p. 45, *et seq.*, that I can scarcely furnish examples which he has not already cited, adduce to facts and evidence which he has not already discussed, or form conclusions which he has not already established. To his able essay, and to the examples which he has cited, I am almost exclusively indebted for these brief comparative remarks, as I must be also to his generosity for the freedom with which I refer to his pages. To the reader I make no apology for

\* A work which ought to be in the hands of every antiquary, but—as I gather from the comparatively contracted roll of subscribers, though comprising archæologists of the highest reputation—is not.

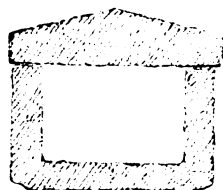




Head



Foot



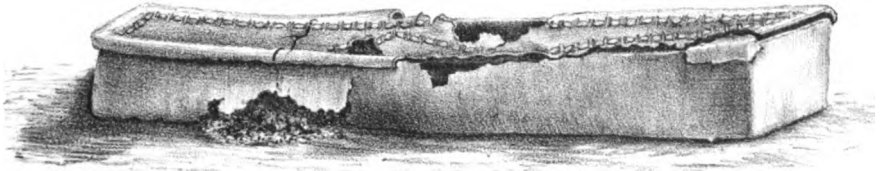
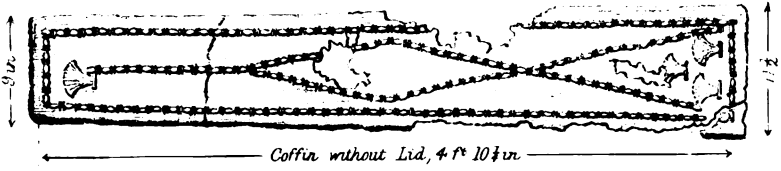
Section



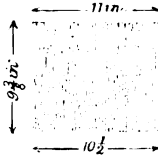
A F. Sprague del.



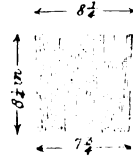
W. West lith.



Ornament, 1/2 size

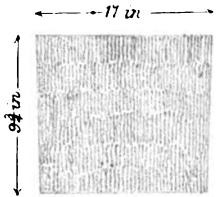
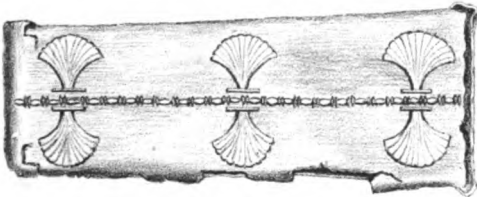


Head

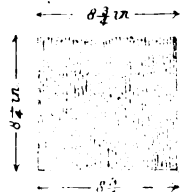
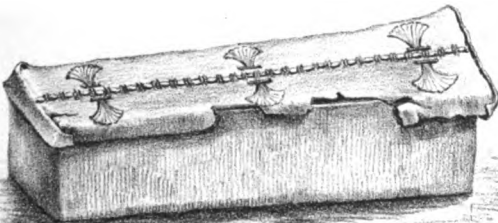


Foot

Lead 7/8 thick



Head



Foot

2 ft 4 in.

A F Sprague del

W. Wood lith.





saying nothing new when nothing new is to be said ; but that some few illustrations in point should be offered is conceded.

Various modes of interment were adopted by the Romans, whether the remains of the dead were consumed by fire or the body were consigned to its kindred earth. Both these practises were common, and examples of both often occur in the same cemetery ; but in Britain cremation and urn burial certainly predominated. "The earliest practice of the Romans," says Mr. Wright, "was to bury the bodies of their dead entire ; it was not until the time of the Dictator Sylla (81 B.C.) that the custom of cremation was established, and from that time either custom was adopted, at the pleasure of the individual or the family of the deceased. About the second century of the Christian æra the older practice began to be resumed, and from this time cremation was gradually superseded."\*

When cremation was employed, the ashes of the dead were collected and usually placed in an urn, occasionally in a leaden coffer. There were various modes of depositing these urns. Sometimes they were placed in a hole in the ground, but were more frequently enclosed in a little cist of wood, stone or tiles. Many examples of urns enclosed in small square tile cists have been found at Colchester, of which drawings may be seen in the Museum of our Society. Occasionally they have been found enclosed in large amphoræ of which the neck has been broken off to admit the urn and afterwards reunited. Graves composed of roof tiles set on end, and adjusted in form like the roof of a house, beneath which urns were deposited, have also been met with ; and others have been found enclosed in stone chests.

When the body was to be buried several kinds of coffin were used, according to the affluence and dignity of the deceased, namely, of wood, baked clay, lead or stone. Wooden coffins are, of course, entirely decayed, but ligneous fragments are sometimes found, together with three or four large nails with which they were fastened. These nails have induced some to believe that they denoted the burial place of persons who had been crucified, but it was

\* "The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon," by Thomas Wright.

conclusively proved by Mr. Roach Smith, in an article in his "Collectanea Antiqua," vol. iii., p. 19, that they were simply used for the purpose indicated.

Roman coffins of stone and lead have been exhumed in different parts of England as well as upon the continent, but as Mr. Roach Smith observes, "Coffins in lead of the Roman epoch are not of very frequent occurrence in England and in France, but there is every reason to believe that they have often been confounded in past times with those of much later date" In Essex stone sarcophagi have been found at Hazeleigh and Ramsden Belhus, and several leaden coffins at Colchester.

As I remarked in the brief account which I furnished to the "Gentleman's Magazine" of the sepulchral remains found at East Ham at the time of their discovery, stone sarcophagi and leaden coffins manifestly denote position and wealth, as such materials must have been costly, especially in this part of the kingdom; while the existence of such cemeteries proves the great population of Roman Britain, for we find them everywhere, not only near towns, but in places sparingly populated, if populated at all. Many must long since have been destroyed, and many probably remain for future accidents such as this to bring to light. The greatness of the Roman population in Essex is very surely indicated by their remains extensively scattered over the entire face of the county, and will be more clearly manifest in the numerous traces of their occupation detailed by our Hon. Secretary in his "Notes on Roman Essex." But it may be incidentally noticed that at Barking may be seen Roman material worked into mediæval walls; at Up-hall, some three miles distant from the site of the East Ham cemetery, is situate a vast Roman entrenchment, and at Stratford-le-Bow, scarcely four miles distant, sepulchral remains were found in considerable quantities, and, in 1844, a leaden coffin, described by Mr. Roach Smith in the "Archæologia," vol. xxxi., p. 308.

In every interment of this kind, I believe, which has been accurately noted, the coffin has contained lime which has been poured over the body in a slaked or liquid state, and this practice was probably invariable. Thus, in two recorded examples at York: One coffin appeared to be

half-filled with lime, excepting the place where the head had lain. The lime being very carefully taken out, the lower surface presented a distinct impression of the human body over which, with the exception of the face, the lime had been poured in a liquid state; the body having been first covered with a cloth, the texture of which was distinctly seen in the impression on the lime. The feet had been crossed and covered with shoes or sandals, having nails in the soles, the marks of which upon the lime were distinctly visible. The remains were those of a female, who had been buried in all her usual attire, and the coffin contained numerous personal ornaments, rings, bracelets, earrings, necklaces, &c. In the other instance the coffin had contained a Roman mother with her babe in her lap, whose forms were perfectly impressed in the lime, which retained also the colour of the purple cloth in which they had been wrapped.\* I have briefly cited these two examples on account of the remarkable and accurate indications presented of the mode in which the bodies were encased. In the great majority of cases, as at East Ham, the contents have been disturbed and rifled by the workmen before they could be submitted to careful and scientific examination.† It is greatly to be regretted that when excavations are being carried on, especially for great public works, definite and peremptory instructions are not given to the workmen to refrain from disturbing any ancient remains which may be found, but to reserve them for inspection and examination by competent persons.

Sarcophagi enriched with sculpture or bas-reliefs are of very uncommon occurrence in this country: they are generally quite plain or but very slightly ornamented. But one found in the Minories, London, described by Mr. Roach Smith and engraved in his "Collectanea Antiqua,"‡ is elaborately decorated with sculpture, and has a bust of the

\* "The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon."

† Thus the fine sarcophagus found in the Minories was instantly broken open by the workmen, in expectation of finding treasure, and the leaden coffin only saved by the timely interposition of the Rev. Thomas Hill, Rector of Holy Trinity, in whose parish it was found. The like happened at Hazeleigh. And at Bethnal Green, the Parish Beadle, accompanied by two policemen, and intent upon a coroner's inquest, dug into and mixed the whole contents of the coffin into a confused mass, with a trowel.

‡ Vol. iii., p. 46.

deceased in a medallion on one side. It contained a leaden coffin, within which were the remains of a boy, and a quantity of lime. The coffin was ornamented with a beaded pattern and escallop shells. These are now in the British Museum.

Roman coffins of lead found in England, when enriched at all, are almost invariably ornamented with escallop shells mixed either with a corded or beaded pattern, differing only in the arrangement of the design. That upon the larger coffin found at East Ham is more elegantly disposed than in any other example which has come under my notice. In another specimen found in Bethnal Green about three years ago, which I was fortunate enough to see very shortly after its exhumation, we have, instead of the beaded or corded lines, a pattern resembling a closely jointed bamboo, or the vertebræ of a fish; an ornament which, I believe, is at present unique.\* Others, from Colchester, engraved in the "Collectanea Antiqua," pl. xiv., figs. 3 and 4, have annulets interspersed with the escallops. In all cases the lid overlaps the sides.

There is no reason whatever for supposing that there is any recondite signification in the escallop shells, least of all that they denote Christian sepulture as some have hastily conjectured, thus reducing their date to a period considerably later than the Roman epoch, to which they unquestionably belong; and in fact on the lid of a coffin found in the Old Kent Road, in 1811, the escallops were associated with figures of Minerva. The escallop, however, appears to be an ornament peculiar to Roman coffins found in England, but Mr. Roach Smith considers that there is no reason for supposing that it was intended otherwise than as a neat and not inelegant ornament selected to suit the popular taste, or the whim or convenience of the manufacturer.

Several Roman leaden coffins have been found at Colchester, but not one of them has been preserved in the town. Morant states that "On the 24th of March, 1749-50, in the Windmill-field, near the west end of the

\* In this instance the leaden coffin had been encased in another of wood. For a detailed account of the discovery, with a description of the coffin and its contents, accompanied by illustrations, by Mr. H. W. Rolfe, see the Proceedings of the Evening Meetings of the London and Middlesex, and Surrey Archæological Societies.

town, was found a leaden coffin; not lying due east and west, but north-east and south-west. In it was a quantity of dust, but no bones, except very small remains of the backbone, and the skull in two pieces. There lay near the head two bracelets or picture frames (!) of jet, one plain the other scalloped, and a very small and slender one of brass wrought, and four bodkins of jet. The coffin was cast or wrought all over with lozenges, in each of which was an escallop shell, but no date. Near it was found an urn, holding about a pint, in which were two coins of large brass, one of Antoninus Pius, and the other of Alexander Severus.\* "This coffin," says Mr. William Wire, of Colchester, in a letter to Mr. Roach Smith, "was found immediately opposite the Hospital on the other side of the road. I have heard old people say that some years ago a scallop-shell lead coffin was found in the field where the Union-house now stands." Two other discoveries of the same kind, made at Colchester, were communicated to Mr. Roach Smith by Mr. Wire. Both coffins were dug up on the site of the Roman burial place to the west of Butt Lane, at the depth of about six feet. One was about half full of lime upon which lay the remains of a skeleton much decomposed. The contents of the other were similar, but the skeleton which appeared to be that of a young person was better preserved and the teeth were quite perfect. Mr. Wire states that two oblong medallions in the central compartment of the lid which were repeated on the side, contained what appeared to him to be the representation of persons sacrificing. The first of these coffins is fortunately preserved, and was in the Museum of Mr. Bateman of Youlgrave, Derbyshire. The other, soon after its discovery, was sold for its value as old lead and melted down!! Both specimens are engraved in the "Collectanea Antiqua," pl. xiv., fig. 3 and 4. These appear to comprise the whole of the known discoveries of Roman leaden coffins in Essex, but out of the four found at Colchester only one has been preserved, and that in a remote county. It is to be hoped, now that a Museum exists, that no more antiquities will be destroyed or conveyed from the town.

\* Morant's "Hist. Colchester," p. 183. "Collectanea Antiqua," vol. iii., p. 52.

A letter from the late Mr. J. A. Repton, dated Springfield, Aug. 18th, 1838, addressed to the Editor of the "Gentleman's Magazine," gives a description of a Roman sarcophagus discovered on Jenkin's Farm in the parish of Hazeleigh, which contained the skeleton of a female. It was about 6ft. 9in. long, and the stone four inches thick. The description is illustrated by an engraving of a section of the coffin. It was about four feet from the surface. In the same communication Mr. Repton also relates that another was found a short time previously in Stoney Hills Field, upon Woolshot's Farm, in the parish of Ramsden Belhouse, about two feet from the surface, resembling the former, excepting that in the absence of a lid this appeared to have been arched over with flints. A piece of lead was torn up by the plough near the spot.

Those who would desire a perfect and more systematic description of this class of Roman interments will consult the memoir in Mr. Roach Smith's "Collectanea Antiqua"\* to which I have referred, and which appears to have exhausted the subject, the numerous examples cited by Mr. Smith comprising most of the known discoveries of Roman Coffins in lead in England and France.

\* "Coll. Antiq.," vol. iii., p. 45 et seq., with an additional notice of Roman Sepulchral Remains found at Petham, Kent, vol. iv., p. 173. See also Weever's "Funeral Monuments," p. 30, edit. 1631, for an early and interesting notice of a leaden coffin with its contents found in Ratcliffe Fields, Stepney.

---

#### THE STRANGMAN PEDIGREE—ADDENDUM.

MARY BARNARDISTON, the first wife of William Strangman, and mother of the Antiquary, was the daughter of Sir Thomas Barnardiston, of Kedyngton in Suffolk, and Great Cotes in the County of Lincoln. His will was proved 8th November, 1542, in which he mentions his son Strangman. The mother of Mary Barnardiston was Anne, daughter of Thomas Lucas, of Little Sexham, Solicitor-General to King Henry VII. Her will, dated 26th December, 1559, was proved May 3rd, 1560. (See Pedigree in Gage's "Hundred of Thingoe, Suffolk.")—*Ex inform. Rd. Almack, Esq., F.S.A., H.W.K.*





- .h. *a* In springing of the moone is best to sowe  
 In dares warme . and treen / vnprofitable  
 If that the lande / brub<sup>h</sup> hem be ouer grobbe  
 Seide it thus . that fatte and beeing able<sup>a. tyra</sup>  
 leue ere it by<sup>o. tyra</sup> and leue the leeme knab<sup>h</sup>  
 Couert in blode y<sup>e</sup> wol this k<sup>u</sup>sh<sup>h</sup> tranaille  
 And bromping it . the fatte lande comtezualk
- .h. *a* Thus wherme it is so bent / by yeres fyve  
 As mygh<sup>h</sup> it not / and after shal<sup>h</sup> thobbe se  
 That is as fatte<sup>r</sup> lande wol<sup>ere</sup> crete and thribe  
 Tholpe as grotes sayen shall planted be  
 Of children stemes in brigntes  
 p<sup>r</sup>haunce in remembraunce that tholpe tree  
 ys p<sup>r</sup>myuent to brigpne chastitee
- .b. *a* The greynes names is noo nede to telle  
 Ner after tyme and places hobbe that change  
 Suffise it the there as thobbe cast<sup>h</sup> d<sup>o</sup>belle  
 To se the comtrey seed / and seede estraunge  
 p<sup>r</sup>euue eke the vnpreued greyne afore esthanng  
 luyne and feathers sleyn and on thare roote  
 by driede are as donngung landes boote
- .d. *a* And lette hem drin<sup>h</sup> vnlepyne and by that drinke  
 The landes iuce<sup>h</sup> in place eke hoot and dure  
 In champeyne eke / and mygh the sees brynke  
 Se tyme vpon the oberb in bynes h<sup>u</sup>  
 In places colde and moyst or shade and h<sup>u</sup>  
 hane thou noo haste . and this to kepe in houres  
 Afbell as moneth or dayes / thym<sup>h</sup> honoure is

A TRANSLATION OF THE FIRST BOOK OF  
PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE, EDITED FROM  
A MS. OF THE 15<sup>TH</sup> CENTURY.

By BARTON LODGE, A.M.

THE following is carefully copied from an unpublished Manuscript in Colchester Castle Library. The volume from which it has been transcribed bears the autograph of the late Charles Gray, Esq., and appears to have been presented, together with many other valuable books, by that distinguished benefactor of the Institution. By a strange mistake of the binder, it is lettered "Tusser's Calendar," whereas it is a Translation of Palladius "de rebus rusticis." That Author wrote in Latin some time after the middle of the 4th century, in the reign of Valentinian or Theodosius. His work consists of 14 books, one for each month in the year, describing the agricultural proceedings then in season, with an introductory book of general directions, and there is appended a treatise on Grafting. This last only is in verse; the other books are in plain, matter-of-fact prose in the original, though the Translator has arrayed them in a poetical dress. The first, or introductory, Book of the Translation is here given entire. As a specimen of the language of the period it will be interesting, and not without value.

It is vain, at this time of day, to enquire after the name and history of the Translator: scarcely a clue remains to lead to their discovery. The title-page, if there ever were any, has perished, together with the first leaves of a carefully executed index prefixed to the Translation; the concluding book also, and part of that preceding it, appear to have been ruthlessly destroyed before the volume was submitted to the conservative offices of the binder.

An idea of the penmanship may be best gained from the accompanying *fac-simile*, produced by lithography. The date of the M.S. the Editor is disposed to assign to the early part of the 15th century.

Among the points especially to be observed are the following :—I., there are none of the distinctive Anglo-Saxon letters. II., the nouns have frequently *n* for the plural termination ; not only *housen*, and *oxen* or *exon*, but *foon* for foes, *fleen* for fleas, *been* for bees, *treen* for trees, *cleen* for claws, &c., &c. III., double letters are of comparatively rare occurrence, but we have in many places *the* for thee, *to* for too, *of* for off, *thre* for three, &c. ; and yet *eree* is used frequently for ear or plough, and is pronounced as a monosyllable. IV. The pronouns have regularly a dative case, by which only we can account for such strange expressions as “ Us is to write,” in s. 2, and “ Us to wear honest is,” in s. 166. V. *Hem* is the accusative plural for *Them*, and *Her* is the form constantly used for *their* ; *Hit* or *Hyt* is the neuter pronoun for *it* ; *whom* occurs in the neuter gender, and *this* is plural as well as singular ; *Self* and *Selve* are used indifferently in the singular and plural. VI. In verbs the termination —*th* occurs in all persons in the plural number, but most frequently in the 2nd person plural imperative ; the infinitive in *n*, as *to doon*, *to seen*, is very common, and sometimes occurs joined by a conjunction to the more modern form, which rejects the *n*, as in s. 3, “ to rere and doon.” The custom had commenced of discarding the *n* not only from the infinitive, but also from the passive participle ; thus we have not only *to do* instead of *to doon*, but also *it is take*, *it is know*, instead of *it is taken*, *it is known*, &c., &c. It is needless to say that the latter form has been discarded, the former adopted, by modern usage, *quem penes arbitrium est et jus et norma loquendi*. Not only *to* but *as* also is used redundantly before the imperative : vide ss. 11, 22, 33. VII. In the glossary will be found many adverbs which have gone completely out of use, *e.g.*, *astite*, *bydeen*, *yorne*, &c., &c. VIII. The conjunction *But*, and *But if*, in the sense of *except*, is remarkable. An instance occurs in s. 14. *For* is repeatedly used in the sense of *for the prevention of*, or as we should say now, *for fear of*, *e.g.* in s. 74. We find this usage in later writers, as for example, in Fairfax’s dedication of his Tasso to Queen Elizabeth—

“ Her hand, her lap, her vesture’s hem,  
Muse, touch not for polluting them.”

In fact, it is continued to the present day, in such phrases as "good for a cold," &c., &c. The metre is one which was a favourite with Chaucer, and which he doubtless made popular in his time : it is the stanza of 7 lines, each line consisting of 5 feet, or 10 syllables ; the final *e* in such words as *wyse*, in 1 s. 5 l., as in Chaucer's time, is often to be read as a distinct syllable. This is the metre uniformly employed throughout the Translation ; but prefixed to several of the Books is a Preface by the Translator in a stanza of eight lines, the first and third rhyming together, and the sixth and eighth ; the second, fourth, fifth and seventh all ending in the same sound.

It has been the Editor's endeavour to present the text as nearly as possible as it stands in the M.S. ; even palpable errors have been preserved ; as the omission of the *s* from *myschief* in s. 140 ; and *lange* and *strange* for *longe* and *stronge* in s. 13. A word, probably *East*, has been omitted from s. 44, l. 5, and in s. 85 there is an omission of a whole line, and space left for it. The departure from this rule of forbearance to add or alter in s. 139, where *is* is inserted in brackets, is a single exception.

In ss. 33 and 40 occurs the word *p'mynent*, which most likely is an abbreviation of *promynent*. The reader can determine for himself by referring to the *fac simile* page. The Editor has not met with any other instance of *prominent* used substantively and applied to persons ; he thought at one time the word might be *parmynent*, from the Fr. *mener* ; but that is equally unsupported by authority. There is, however, no difficulty about the meaning, which is "one who presides over, a foreman, præses."

The spelling also is presented in the same charming variety which prevails in the M.S. : thus we have *air* spelt in four different ways in the space of two pages. *Medyssing* for *medicine*, and *Echate* for *Hecate* are, however, more than we should expect in a Translation from a Latin Author.

The rendering of the original may be considered, upon the whole, intelligent and faithful : but there are signs of its having been made from a corrupt text ; e.g., in s. 24 the corresponding Latin is "tria mala æque nocent, sterilitas, morbus, vicinus," but the Translation is made from a

false reading of *vitium* instead of *vicinus*, and takes the incongruous form :

“ Iliche fre fro thinges thre thowe twynne,  
Sterilitee, infirmitee, and synne.”

Although we read in s. 105,

“ Yit as myn auctor spak, so would I speke,  
Seth I translate, and lothe am fro him breke,”

yet this can only mean that the assertions of the original shall not be suppressed or altered ; for in several passages the Translator speaks in his own person, and some of these are among the most interesting parts of the publication ; thus, after specifying in s. 120 some ridiculous remedies against hail, mist, and mildew, he adds *proprio motu* : “ Whi laugh ye so ? this crafte is not so lite,” and again in s. 121 in a more serious tone :

“ But as I trust in Crist that shedde his bloode  
For us, whos tristeth this Y holde him wode.  
Myne auctor eke (whoo list in him travaille !)  
Seith this prophaned thyng may nought availe.”

In s. 78, having translated from Palladius that to hang in the window a piece of rope by which a man has been strangled is a charm to keep off weasels, he adds facetiously in a parenthesis—

“ Pray God let it be never the !”

In s. 65 the original “ Rain-water is to be preferred to all other for drinking” is amplified with all the enthusiasm of a Teetotaller into,

“ To drynke of this, of waters first and best,  
Licoure of grace above, a thing celest.”

With respect to the explanatory words between the lines in several places, they are apparently in the same handwriting as the text, and sometimes suggest a substitute for the expression introduced into the Translation ; but generally they are intended to explain the meaning of the word employed in the text ; they are by no means always the words of the original.

The Glossary does not pretend to be anything like complete, but it is hoped that it will enable the Reader even though not much versed in language of this period, to arrive at the meaning without much trouble. Where the word differs only in the spelling from that now in use,

it has not been thought worth the while to introduce it into the Glossary.

The Editor, in conclusion, tenders his best thanks to the Committee of the Colchester Castle Society for the kind permission granted him to retain the M.S. so long in his possession.

*Colchester, November, 1864.*

---

1.

Consideraunce is taken atte prudence  
 What mon me moost enforme : and husbondrie  
 No rethorick doo teche or eloquence ;  
 As sum have doon hemself to magnifie.  
 What com therof ? That wyse men folie  
 Her wordes helde. Yit other thus to blame  
 We styntte, in cas men doo by us the same.

2.

Us is to write tillinge of everie londe,  
 With Goddes grace, eko pasture and housyng ;  
 For husbondry how water shal be fonde ;  
 What is to rere <sup>nutryre</sup> or doon in everything,  
 Plesaunce and fruyte the tilier to bring  
 As season wol ; his appultreen <sup>pomee</sup> what houre  
 Is best to set is part of our laboure.

3.

In thinges **IIII** alle husbondrie mot stande :  
 In water, aier, in lande, and gouvernance.  
 And **III** the first, as water, aier, and lande  
 Beth natural, the **IIII**th is of plesaunce  
 And crafte of men ; but this consideraunce  
 Is first to seen, how thyng is of nature  
 In places there thou wilt have the culture.

## 4.

And first beholde aboute and se thin aire,  
 Yf it be clere and hole stand out of fere ;  
 The Water eke beholde yf it be faire,  
 Hoolsum, and light, and eyther springing there  
 Or elles thider brought from elles where,  
 Or that it come of rayne ; eke se thi lande  
 Be <sup>fertile</sup>bering, and commodiously stande.

## 5.

Good ayer is there as dales deep are noon,  
 And mystes derk noo dayes maketh nyght ;  
 The contremen coloured well ichone,  
 Thaire wittes clere and unoffended sight,  
 Her voices faire, her herynge pure and light.  
 All this is preef of holsum aire and clene,  
 And there as is contraier is aire unclene.

## 6.

The water out of gayseyn or of myer <sup>palude</sup>  
 Be it not brought, nor out of metal synke,  
 That it be freshe coloured first desire,  
 Not <sup>mody</sup>poury, but plesaunt and good to drinke,  
 And smell also therto in cas it stynke ;  
 If it be coole in heete and luke in colde,  
 The better may thowe with that water holde.

## 7.

Yit although thees in water faire appere,  
 An hidde defaict is sumtyme in nature  
 Under covert, and therof thus thowe lere :  
 Yf contremen in likyng hele endure,  
 Her hedes good, her chekes also pure,  
 And lite or no compleynt inwith the brest,  
 The longes hole and wynded with the best.

## 8.

The longe-woo cometh ofte of yvel eire,  
 The stomake eke of eire is overtake,  
 Take heede eke yf the dwellers in that leire  
 Her wombes, sydes, reynes swelle or ake,  
 Yf langoure in thaire bledders ought awake.  
 And if thoue see the people sounde and faire,  
 No doubt is in thy water nor their aire.

## 9.

Ffecunditee thowe see thus in thi lande :  
 See not the swerd all naked, white, unclene,  
 All chalk or gravel groissyng in thi hande  
 Withouten moolde admixt, nor sandy lene,  
 Nor hongrie clay, nor stones ful iche rene,  
 To ronke and weete, yolgh, bitter, salt ragstone,  
 Valeyes herde and deepe eke be thir noon.

## 10.

A rotten swerd and welny blaake, it selve  
 Suffysing wel with graas to ouerwrie,  
 And tough to glue ayem though thowe it delve,  
 The fruit of it not scabby, rosted drie,  
 With walwort that goode lande wol signifie.  
 With ryshes, reede, graas, trefoil, plummes wilde,  
 And briers fatte also goo it with childe.

## 11.

Coloured stonde not on to besily  
 To see thi lande ; but rather fatte and swete ;  
 To preve it fatte, a clodde avisely  
 To take, and with gode water weel it wete,  
 And loke if it be glewy, tough to trete ;  
 Or make a dyche, and yf the moolde abounde  
 And wol not in agayne, it is fecounde.



## 12.

Yf it be lene, it goeth all in and more,  
 Yf it be <sup>mediocris</sup> meene, it wol be with the brinke ;  
 But for to take it swete, ataste alore  
 The bitterest erthe and werst that thou canst thinke ;  
 An earthen potte thou take and yeve it drinke  
 In water swete, and theruppon thou deme,  
 Pfor vynes land to chees eke must thou <sup>attendere</sup> yeme.

## 13.

In coors and in colour solute and rare,  
<sup>corpore</sup>  
 The treen thereon light, fertile, fair, and lange,  
<sup>arborea</sup>  
 As peres wilde, as plummes boshes are,  
 Not croked, lene, or seke, but hole and strange ;  
<sup>stagnet (verbum est)</sup> Ne pulle it not, but goodly plaine <sup>elonget (verbum est)</sup> elonge,  
 Ne pitche it not to sore into the vale,  
 Nor breke it not all doun aboute a dale.

## 14.

Tempest, yf it be hilly, must assaille ;  
 An even feelde thou chese, and in the mene,  
 Thater by the cleef awaie travaille ;  
 Or hille or dale in mesure thou demene,  
<sup>pluvis</sup> But se thin eyre be faire and land unlene,  
 An higher hille the wynd that wolde offende  
 Must holde of, but yf woddess the defende.

## 15.

The landes fatte or lene, or thicke or rare,  
 Or drie, or moiste, and not withouten vice,  
 Ffor divers seede yit thay right needful are ;  
 But chese the fatte and moyste is myne avyse.  
 Her werk is leest, and fruyt is moost of price.  
 And after it the thicke and ronke is best :  
 But thicke and drie espy, and grannt it rest.

## 16.

Ayer, water, lande considered in nature,  
 Nowe se the crafte ;—the crafte is gouernance ;  
 Nowe every worde and sentence hath greet cure.  
 The lord present his feelde may best auance.  
 The lande is goode, the colour nought perchaunce ;  
 Therefore in hewe doo thou noo diligence,  
 ffor god by his plesaunce alle will dispence.

## 17.

The graffe and grayne is goode, but after preef  
 Thou sowe or graffe, and seedes newe eschewe  
 To sowe or sette, and trust in thair bonchief.  
 Oute of thaire kynde eke seedes wol renewe  
 And change hemself, as writeth clerics trewe,  
 In places weete all rather then in drie.  
 ffor vynes nowe, apointe of husbondrie.

## 18.

Northwarde in places hote, in places colde  
 Southward, and temporant in Est and West ;  
 Yet of tylling is dyvers reson holde ;  
 But chuse of thi province I holde it best.  
 To fructifie also this is honest,  
 That yonger men obeye unto thaire eldron  
 In gouernynge, as goode and buxom childron.

## 19.

To kytte a vyne is thinges III to attende :  
 The vyne, and fruyt, and place in whom thai growe.  
 Of erly kyttinge branches fele ascende,  
 Of late kyttyng cometh grapes right enowe.  
 From feble lande eke change hem yf thou mowe :  
 For man and tree from feble lande to goode  
 Who can and wol not change I holde him woode.

## 20.

And kytte hem streyt after thi goode vindage,<sup>pota</sup>  
 And grapes fewe and badde, thou kytte hem large.<sup>vindiam</sup>  
 Thyn yrons kepe in harde and sharpe usage  
 For graffyng and for kytting I the charge,  
 And doo thi dede, or flour or germ enlarge,  
 And yf the plough mys doo, the spade amende,  
 In landes drie and hoothe noo vyne extende.

## 21.

In places hoothe, in places over drie  
 It is noo boote his vyne a man to sette,  
 There as for heete he must hem over wrie;<sup>ope rine</sup>  
 Yit if that he Vulturinus oversette  
 A vyne in heete or other blastes lette,  
 Or brenne a vyne, in stre or other thyng  
 To covert here is holsom husbondyng.

## 22.

The bareyne braunche, if rouke and greene it be,  
 Right by lette kytte him of as mortal foo  
 Of alle thi tree; but barenne lande thou flee  
 As pestilence; in douged lande also  
 To sowe in vynes younge as do not so;  
 Yit Grekes sayen that after yeres thre  
 Save Wortes, sowe in hem what ever it be.

## 23.

Iche herbe also thai sayen it is to sowe,  
 In landes drie, outtake of hem the bene;  
 The bene in landes weete is best to throwe;  
 And sette not outte thi landes fate or lene  
 To him whoos lande adjoyneth on thi rene;  
 For harme and stryffe of that upon thi self  
 May ryse, ye and perchaunce the overwhelwe.

## 24.

Tylle all thi felde, or all thy felde is lorne ;  
 Thi whete, a wonder, chaunging, thries sowe,  
 In lande to fatte, wol tourne into other corne,  
 And rie of whete ysowen wol up growe,  
 As thay that are expert in tilling knowe.  
 Iliche fre fro thinges thre thowe twynne,  
 Sterilitee, infirmitee, and synne.

## 25.

In bareine lande to sette or foster vynes  
 Dispiseth alle the labour and expence.  
 In felde<sup>vini</sup> more, in hilles nobler, wyne is ;  
 Abundaunt wyne the north wynde wol dispence  
 To vynes sette agayne his influence ;  
 The sotheren wynde enspireth better wyne.  
 Nowe moche or noble chees ; the choys is thyne.

## 26.

Necessitee nath never haliday :  
 Take hede on that, and felde<sup>vini</sup> temperate,  
 All though it be goode sowyng, yit alway  
 Or long yf it be drie in oon astate,  
 Let sowe it forth, and god it fortunate ;  
 And yf thi wey be foule, it is dampnable,  
 And neither plesaunt, neither profitable.

## 27.

To tille a felde man must have diligence,  
 And balk it not ; but eree it upbe bydene.  
 A litel tilled weel wol quyte expence,  
 So take on hande as thou may wele sustene.  
 The vynes blake awaie thowe take, eke grene  
 And tender vynes kytte are therby shent,  
 And stakes long are vynes increment.

## 28.

Twine every kirk awaywarde from the grape ;  
 Lest dropping doo it harme, ennointeth eke  
 The branches kitte, and up thay faste escape  
 Alle fatte and sadde : deep lande also thai seke,  
 Olyves greet oute of that lande wol reke  
 With drafty, wattry fruyte and late and lite  
 Unsuffisaunt the costes for to quyte.

## 29.

Luke ayer and tempre wynde olyves love,  
 And vynes, that upon the hilles stande,  
 By processe may be brought to thair above,  
 Yit not but fotes IIII in feble land ;  
 And seven foote in fatte up may they stande.  
 Eke as the grape is grene and wol not shake,  
 Up bind it softe and it is undertake.

## 30.

Thy vyne in oon stede ever thou ne bynde,  
 And delve her cloos for hurtyng thi vindage,  
 Eke deep and fertile land it is to fynde,  
 And two foote depe is good for corne tillage,  
 And double deep for treen in depnesse gage.  
 A novel vine up goeth by diligence  
 As fast as it goeth down by negligence.

## 31.

And take on hande in husbonding thi lande  
 As thowe may bere in maner and mesure ;  
 War arrogaunce in takyng thing in hande ;  
 For after pride in scorne thou maist assure.  
 And elder then oon yere noo grayne in ure  
 Thowe putte, in drede it die ; yit hilles yelde is  
 Wel gretter grayne and fewer then in feldys.

## 32.

In springing of the moone is best to sowe  
 In daies warm ; and, treen unprofitable—  
 Yf that thi lande with hem be overgrowe,  
 Devide it thus ;—that fatte and bering able <sup>ac terra</sup>  
 Let eree it up, and leve the lene unable <sup>ac terra</sup>  
 Covert in wode ; yit wol this, with travaille  
 And brennyng it, thi fatte lande countervaille.

## 33.

But when it is so brent by yeres fyve,  
 As nygh it not, and after shalt thou se <sup>dimitte jacere</sup>  
 That is as fatter lande wol crece and thrive. <sup>crecere</sup>  
 Tholyve, as Grekes sayen, shall planted be  
 Of children clennes in virginitee,  
 Perchance in remembraunce that tholyve tree  
 Ys p'mynent to virgyne chastitee.

## 34.

The greynes names is noo nede to telle,  
 Nor after tyme and places how thai chaunge ;  
 Suffice it the there as thowe casteth dwelle,  
 To see the countrey seed, and seed estraunge,  
 Preve eke the unproved grene afore eschaunge ;  
 Lupyne and fetches sleyn, and on thaire roote  
 Up dried, are as dounging landes boote.

## 35.

And lette hem drie unsleyne, and up thai drinke  
 The landes juce : in place eke hoothe and drie, <sup>succum</sup>  
 In champeyne eke, and nygh the sees brynke  
 Betyme upon thi werk in vynes hie ;  
 In places colde and moist, or shade and hie  
 Have thou noo haste, and this to kepe in houres  
 Aswell as moneth or dayes, thyne honoure is.

## 36.

And tilling, when the tyme is it to doo,  
 Is not to rathe yf daies thries fyve  
 It do prevent, and not to late also  
 As for as long ; eke cornes best wol thryve  
 In open lande solute acclyned blyve  
 Uppon the sonne, and lande is best for whete  
 If it be marly, thicke, and sumdele wete.

## 37.

And barly lande is goode solute and drie,  
 That manner molde hath barly in delite,  
 In cley lande yf men sowe it, it wol die,  
 Trymenstre sedness eke is to respite  
 To places colde of winter snowes white,  
 There as the lande is weete in somer season ;—  
 And other wey to wirche is counter reason.

## 38.

Trymestre seede in hervest for to sowe  
 In landes colde is best, and yf the need,  
 In landes salt that treen or greynes growe,  
 Thou must anon on hervest plante or sede,  
 The malice of that lande and cause of drede  
 That wynter with his shoures may of dryve,  
 Yit must it have an other thing to thryve.

## 39.

Sum gravel or sum water lande caste under  
 If thou it plannte, and yf thou wolt it sede  
 A comune molde among it part asonder,  
 And alle the better wol thi werkes spede.  
 The stones on thi lande is for to drede ;  
 For thai be somer hote and winter colde,  
 That vyne, and greyne, and tree distempe wolde.

## 40.

The lande aboute a roote is to be moved  
 All upsodoune, and fleykes<sup>crates</sup> shal we take  
 Of dounge and moolde, and first be moolde admoved  
 And after dounge. A pmynent to make  
 Upon thi felde, hym nil I undertake<sup>uolo</sup>  
 That is thi dere entere : and whi ? For, he  
 Wol wene his werke be wele, hou soever it be.

## 41.

To chese or bey a felde consider this,—  
 That his nature and his fecunditie  
 Be not fordoon. In housbonding is mysse,  
 Unhusbondyng undooth fertilitie.  
 Yet posi<sup>pono</sup> I that it myght amended be.  
 The surer is to trust in thinges sure ;  
 The hoole is save, the hurt is for to cure.

## 42.

Yit as for seede, it may wel been amended ;  
 But vynes may have vices worthy blame,  
 To longe, or broode, uptrailed, or extended,  
 As dyvers men have doone to fresh her fame,  
 And fewe or feble grapes in the same  
 Have growe. A grete labour is to correcte  
 A molde in this maner that is infecte.

## 43.

Thy landes is thus to cheese in costes colde ;  
 On south and este se that it faire enclyne,  
 And that noone hille the sonne out from it holde,  
 But from the colde Septemprion declyne,  
 And from northwest there chylling sonnes shyne.  
 In coostes hote Septemtrion thou take,  
 Ther fruyte and high plesaunce and helthes wake.

R



## 44.

And se the floode be goode ther thou will duelle ;  
 For ofte of it exaleth myst impure :  
 And fle ther from, in caas it myght the quelle.  
 By myre also to dwelle it is not sure,  
 And namely and West that drie and dure  
arent et indurant verbum  
 In season hoothe, for causes pestilent  
 Engendring there, and wormes violent.

## 45.

Thyne house as wol thi fortune and thi felde  
 Lete make it up in crafte and in mesure,  
 Il to repaire as may thi lande foryelde,  
 Demened so that yf mysseaventure  
 Fordo thin house, a year or two recure  
recuret verbum est  
 It at the mest, and sette it sumdele hie,  
 For gladsum and for sadder ground and drie.

## 46.

The fundament enlarge it half a foote  
extra parietem  
 Outwith the wongh, but first the grounde assay  
 If it be ragge or roche ; on it thou foote  
fundare  
 In depth a foote or two ; but uppon clay  
 If thou wilt bilde an other is the array ;—  
 Let delve and cast it up until thou fynde  
 It herde and hoole, and tough itself to bynde.

## 47.

With orchard, and with gardeyne, or with mede,  
 Se that thyne hous with hem be umviroune,  
 The side in longe upon the south thou sprede,  
 The cornel ryse upon the wynter sonne,  
 And gire it from the cold West yf thou conne,  
 Thus shall thyne hous be wynter warm and light,  
 And somer colde, and lo this crafte is light.

## 48.

Eke fourme it so that faire it stande yfere ;  
 The wynter <sup>domus</sup>wones on the sonny side  
 There Phebus with his bemes may it chere,  
 And tymbre stronge enlace it for to abyde,  
 Eke pave or floore it wele in somer tyde,  
 But tymbre not thyne hous with dyvers kynde  
 Of treen, as ashe and birche, and ooke, and lynde.

## 49.

The mapul, ooke, and assche endureth longe  
 In floryng yf thou <sup>acer</sup>ferne it weel, or <sup>fraxinus</sup>chave,  
 That in the tree the mortar doo noo wronge.  
 Oon parte of lyme and tweyne of robell have,  
 Sex fyngre thicke a floore therof thou pave  
 With lyme and ashes mixt with cole and sande,  
 A flake above in thiknesse of thyne hande.

## 50.

The flooring wol be blak and wynter warme,  
 And lyco oure shedde, anoon it wol up drie,  
 But, lest the sonne in somer doo the harme,  
 Thy somer hous northest and west thou wrie, <sup>inclines</sup>  
 With marble or with tyle thi floryng wrie, <sup>operias</sup>  
 Or thus thou maist thi wynter floryng take,  
 Or lyme or gravel mynge and therof make.

## 51.

The bylder eke to knowe is necessarie  
 What gravel and what lyme is profitable.  
 Savelles dolve in <sup>colours</sup>III natures varie,  
 In reed, and hoore, and blake unvariable. <sup>this is notable</sup>  
 Of hem the reed is best, the hoor is able,  
 The blake is werst, yit gripe hem in thyne honde  
 For grossyng gravel fynest wol be fonde. <sup>stediens</sup>

## 52.

Eke preve it thus, in clothes white it kest  
 And shaken oute yf that the clooth be cleue,  
 Withouten spotte, that gravel is the best,  
 And yf thou may noon delve in flood, or lene  
 Clay lande, or nygh the see, gravel thou glene.  
 The see gravel is lattest for to drie,  
 And lattest may thou therwith edifie.

## 53.

The salt in it thi werkes wol resolve  
 And lande gravel anoon set in worching,  
 Er soone or wynde or shoures it dissolve.  
 And floode gravel is goode for coveryng.  
 Oute of the see gravel the salt to bringe  
 Let drenche it for a tyme in water swete.  
 Thy lyme of stones harde is thus to gete—

## 54.

Stone tiburtyne, or floody columbyne,  
 Or spongy rede, lete, brenne, or marble stone,  
 For bylding better is the harder myne,  
 The fistulose and softer lete it goone  
 To cover with, and tweyne of lyme in oon  
 Of gravel mynye, and marl in floode gravel  
 A thriddendele wol sadde it wonder wel.

## 55.

Thi walles bricke with brik thou must corone  
 A foote aboute, and sumdel promynent,  
 That thay by storme or rayne be not fordone,  
 And lete hem drie er thou thi bemes bent,  
 Or rovyng sette uppon, lest all be shent  
 For lacke of crafte, eke this is husbondrie  
 To covert hem with sumwhat whille thay drie.

56.

Make light ynough aboute on everie syde,  
 And loke, as the is taught, that este and west  
 And north and southe thyne houses thou devyde,  
 In wynter south, in veer and hervest ést ;  
 Septemtrion in summer houseth best ;  
 And half as high thy chambre and triclyne  
 Thou make as it is mesure long in lyne.

57.

Of suche a stuffe as easy is to fynde  
 Is best to bilde, and bordes of cipresse  
 Plaine and directe upsette hem in thaire kynde  
 A foot atwynne, and hem togedre dresse  
 With jenyper, boxe, olyve, or cupresse,  
 So worching up thi woves by and by,  
 But se that it be tymbred myghtely.

58.

<sup>crassa canna</sup> <sup>palude</sup> <sup>contusa</sup>  
 Fatte reed of myre yground and tempered tough,  
 Let daube it on the wough on iche asyde,  
 And with a trowel make it plaine yo,  
 That it upon the tymbre fast abyde,  
 Lyme and gravel comyxt thereon thou glide,  
 With marble greet ygrounde and myxt with lyme  
 Polisse alle uppe thy werke in goodly tyme.

59.

Eke whytyng werk is thyng of grete delite.  
 Lime is for that in tymes long made lene ;  
 That it be profitable preve <sup>mox</sup> astite ;  
 As tymber hewe it with an axe and sene <sup>expectet</sup>  
 Yf it be not in the egge, and sum sustene <sup>acre</sup>  
 In the axe all gliry tough and softe relente ;  
 For whytyng that lyme is convenient.

60.

The parget of thi wough be stronge and bright,  
 The truel first ful ofte it must distreyne,  
 And as it drieth este and este it dight ;  
 The kirtils doo theron of marble greyne,  
 But first lete oon be drie, and thenne engreyne  
 A smaller coote above on that, and thenne  
 A thridde on alle as small as it may renne.

61.

And ware a thyng that many men have used,  
 To drenche her dwellyngplace in dales deep,  
 Lest water sholde hem lacke, and foule excused,  
 For helth is rather thenne thi lust to kepe ;  
 The languor of thi lande is to bywepe.  
 In stede of Welle or wynche have a cisterne  
 And rayne of every hous in it gouverne.

62.

Let crafte it up plesaunt as it may suffice  
 Unto thi self, as best is broode and longe.<sup>longum</sup>  
 The guttures left in sadde ground assise,<sup>fusoris relicta</sup>  
 And yole on it tilpanyng playne and stronge.<sup>Tundas testaceum pavimentum</sup>  
 This payyng must thou cure and labour longe.<sup>du</sup>  
 And clere it up, but frote it wol with larde  
 Fatte and decocte ; thi werk wol the rewarde.

63.

Whenne that is drie, upwalle it every side  
 In like maner, eke larde it, herdde it weel.  
 Tyl water wol endwelle it and abyde,  
 And fede in it thi waterfish and eel,  
 To move and make it faire and fresh as well,  
 As though it were a ryver or a welle.  
 Now chenes to repaire I am to telle.<sup>rimas</sup>

64.

The chenes, holes, pottes, poles mende,  
 And thorough the stoone yf that the water synke,  
 Take pitche and talgh, as nede is the to spende,  
 And seeth hem tyl thai boile up to the brynke,  
 And let it coole ; eke give it lyme to drynke  
 A lite and lite and smal, but mynge it yorne.<sup>sepe</sup>  
 Tyl every parte until oon body tourne.

65.

Whenne this cyment is made, it must in synke  
 Uche hole, and chene, and every lekyng stoone,  
 And presse it thicke aboute on every brynke ;  
 And holsum is that pipes from it goone,  
 To bringe aboute in water oon by oon,  
 To drynke of this of waters first and best,  
 Licoure of grace above, a thyng celest.

66.

Thi wyne celar in colde Septemtrion  
 Wel derk and ferre from bathes, oste, and stable,  
 Myddyng, cisterne, and thynges everichoon  
 That evel smelle ; eke se that it be able  
 As for thi fruyt, an other thyng notable,  
 Above it well the calcatory make,  
 A wyne pitte the oon half either to take.

67.

Thre grece or IIII is up therto to goo ;  
 Canel or pipes wyne forth to lede  
 Into the vat, and tonnes make also,  
 And pave it yf the lyst in length and brede.  
 A pitte in it, for wyne white and rede  
 That over renne of ignoraunt kepynge,  
 To make is oon goode poynte of husbondyng.

68.

Thi barnes fer fro stynk and sumdele hie,  
 Thi stable ferre away therfro thou sette,  
 Eke se that thay be wyndy, colde, and drie,  
 Thi berne also be playne, and harde the flette,  
 And footes two to thicke it thou ne lette,  
 For every corne a place is to devyse,  
 As large as for thi tyllyng wol suffice.

69.

Thi garner and thi vessel for thi grayne  
 Make sumdele high, and walle it thus to thryve :  
 Oyldegges mixt with clay thou must implayne  
 Thi woves with, and leves of olyve,  
 In stede of chaf upon thi woves dryve,  
 And drie it wel, and then oyldegge it este,  
 And sauffy may thi whete in it be lefte.

70.

This maner crafte wol holde oute of thi whete  
 Gurgolions and other noyus bestes,  
 The coriander leves, lest it swete,  
 Is putte therin, an other crafte unleest is ;  
 From floor to floor to change it ofte his feest is.  
 Coniza is an herbe, as Greekes sayne,  
 That drie is goode to kest under thi grayne.

71.

Thyne oilcellar sette on the somer syde,  
 Holde out the cold and lette come in the sonne  
 At hooles, so that in the wynter tyde  
 Thyne oil with esy pressure out be wonne.  
 Oilmylles, wheelles, wrynges, not begonne  
 Of newe I nyl not speke of nowe, but clene  
 Thyne oyle's receptacles thou demene.

## 72.

Men may also doon other diligence  
 Abouts an oylcellar, it for to warme,  
 The pament under thorled and suspense  
 Bete under fyre, so smoke it may not harme,  
 A dell and hete eke wol thi hous enarme,  
 As from the swerde of wynter kene and colde.  
 Now husbondrie for stables write I wolde.

## 73.

Towards the southe thi stable and thi stall  
 For hors and neet thou sette, and gette in light  
 Oute of the north, and wynterclose it all  
 To holde outte colde. In summer yeve it sight  
 Thi hous to cole, and nygh thi bestes dight  
 A fire in colde ; it wol thyne oxen mende,  
 And make hem faire, yf thai the fyre attende.

## 74.

For harming of thaire hoof eke sette hem drie,  
 And for iche yoke of exon in thi plough  
 VIII foote in brede, and goodly length outtrie,  
 The length as from the horne unto the sough,  
 The brede is crosse, and plank it stronge ynough  
 Under thyne hors, that it be lygging softe  
 Ynough, and harde enough to stande alofte.

## 75.

Eke on the south thou make an hous for bestes,  
 But over hoote attemperate to holde,  
 A pointe of husbondrie not this the leest is,  
 Of forkes, and of borde, and bowes colde  
 A standyng must be made, and overfolde  
 And heled weel with shyngul, tile, or broom,  
 Or segges are as good as to my doom.



76.

This hous aboute also make up thi mewes,  
 For donnge of foules is ful necessarie  
 To londtillynge ; yit gooses donnge eschew is,  
 It is right nought, it is an adversarie  
 To every seed, now everie birdde hem warie !  
 Fy on you, gees ; fy on your tail for shame !  
 Your donnge is nought, turn out your taille of game

77.

And in a toure with plaine and whited walles  
 And fenestelles IIII, a columbaire,  
 As is the gyse, away from there thyne halle is  
 Lete sette, as doves may therto repaire,  
 And inwith make hem nestes many a paire.  
 Olde spartea, that bestes with beth shode,  
 To sprynge amonge the doves is ful goode.

78.

The wesel shal for this doon hem noon harme,  
 So it be doon secré that noo man see.  
 Yit for the wesel use another charme,  
 Sum of the roope wherwith hath strangled be  
 Sum men, pray God lette it be never the,  
 Hang part of that in every fenestell,  
 And this wol from the wesel wite hem well.

79.

Gyf hem comyne ynough, and barme her pennes,  
 And doves moo ynough in wol thay brynge ;  
 And yf thou wolt have many briddes thennes,  
 Let barly bake, or bene, or fitches flynge  
 Afore hem ofte, also for her helping  
 Lette honge aboute in dyvers places rewe,  
 And bestes adversannt hem wol eschewe.

80.

Under thi colver hous in alle the brede  
 Make mewes tweyne, oon litel and obscure,  
 With whete and mylde in that thi turtours fede,  
 In somer faat ynough with litel cure :  
 But boile it in swetness, and oon mesure  
 A strike is for vi<sup>m</sup> oon daies mete,  
 But water ofte refreshhed do hem gete.

81.

And thrushes fede upon that other syde ;  
 To faat hem is avayling and plesaunte ;  
 But make this house wherin thay shal abyde  
 Light, clene, and playne with perches transversannte  
 To sitte upon, and bowes in to chaunte  
 Ychanged ofte ; eke yeve hem figges grounde  
 Comyxt with flour to make hem faat and rounde.

82.

The seed of mirt, if that thou maist it gete,  
 Of birch, of yvy, crabbe, and wild olyve  
 Lete yeve hem nowe and nowe for change of mete ;  
 With changed water ofte. Eke fressh as blyve  
 As thai be take unhurt, with IIII or v  
 Of thrushes tamed, putte hem in this mewe,  
 To doo disport among thees gestes newe.

83.

What woman cannot sette an hen on broode  
 And bryng her briddes forth ? the crafte is lite,  
 But ashes smoke and dust is for hem goode.  
 Eke best are hennes blake, and werst are white,  
 And good are yolgh : but yf thaire appetite  
 With draff of wyne be fedde bareyne  
 Thei beth : for thi therfrom thou hem refreyne.

## 84.

Wol thou thai often hatche and eyron grete  
 Thai legge? Half boiled barly thou hem bringe,  
 Twey cruses<sup>clasi</sup> in oon day oon hennes mete  
 That gothe atte large, and odde eyron in springe<sup>imparis</sup>  
 Of echates under thynne hen sittynge<sup>lune</sup>  
 To putte, as whenne the moone is daies dene<sup>x</sup>  
 Of age is good, and til she be fiftene.

## 85.

And other while an hen wol have the pippe,  
 A white pellet that wol the tonge enrounde,  
 And softly of wol with thi nailes slippe  
 Anoon, and askes after on the wounde  
 Thou kest, and clense it, ley on garlic grounde,  
 Ground alom eke with oile put in her mouthes.

## 86.

As staphisagre medled in thaire mete  
 Wol hele her tonnge, another maladie  
 Wol ryse of soure lupyne, if thai it ete,  
 As cornes that wol under growe her eye,  
 That but thou lete hem oute, the sight wol die.  
 All esely thou maist undo the skynne  
 With prikyng of a nelde or a pynne.

## 87.

Take woman's mylke and juce of portulake,  
 And therwith thou maist hele her eghen sore,  
 Or hony, myxt with salt armonyake  
 And comyn evenly, is goode therefore.  
 And yf thyne hen be lousy, there is more,  
 Eke luyt with staphisagre and comyn  
 Igrounde in wyne and juce of soure lupyne.

88.

The pokok men may rere up esily  
 Yf bestes wilde or theves hem ne greve.  
 Her briddes wol thai fede up besily  
 In feldes forth, and up thai wol atte eve  
 Into a tree lest thai by nyght myscheve.  
 But warre the fox, as while thai sitte on brode  
 To sette in an Ilande were ful goode.

89.

And for a cok beth hennes v ynowe ;  
 The Cok his eyron and his briddes hateth,  
 Until the crest upon thaire hedes growe,  
 And first in Feverer of love he prateth.  
 And benes bake alite his love abateth  
 Right nere adell, yf that he ete hem warme,  
 For thei wol rather his courage enarme.

90.

The cok confesseth emynent cupide  
 When he his gemmy teil begynneth splay  
 About himself so faire on every side,  
 That never foul was in so fresh array.  
 A shuddering, a flusshing, and affray  
 He maketh thenne, and turneth him aboute  
 All golde begoon his tail and wynges stoute.

91.

The pohen eke excused, yf men sette  
 Another henne her eyron forth to brynge,  
 Wol legge in oon yere thries dewe as dette,  
 V atte the frist and IIII at este legginge,  
 And after III or II ; but for bredynge  
 To set an hen on eyron IX is goode,  
 IV of her kynde, and v of other bloode.

92.

The first day of the moone is this to doo  
 The x<sup>th</sup> day, the IIII away betake,  
 And other IIII enscore her place into.  
 To tourne hem ofte also good hede thou take  
 For she may not the turnyng undertake.  
 Yet take for that a stronge hen and a grete :  
 A litel hen on fewer must be sette.

93.

The xxx day goth al out of the shelle,  
 And oon norice may xxv lede.  
 So say not I, but so saith Columelle ;—  
 XV I sey suffice oon henne to fede.  
 And first for hem spring wyne white or rede,  
 On barly seede, or puls decoct and colde  
 To yeve hem frist is good and holsum holde.

94.

And after hacked leek or tender cheses  
 Lete fede hem with, but whye thou holde hem fro ;  
 Ek pluck away the feet and yeve hem breses ;  
 And monethes vi it is to fede hem so ;  
 And after geve him barly to and to  
 Right as the list, but xxx dayes olde  
 Thai. with thaire norce into the felde betolde.

95.

She nowe behinde, and nowe she goth before,  
 And clocketh hem, but when she fynt a corne,  
 She chicheth hem and loith it hem before,  
 Hem ledyng home atte nyght lest thai be lorne.  
 Eke hele hem of the pippe as is beforene  
 Of hennes taught ; but when thaire crestes springe  
 As seke are thay as children in tothinge.

96.

Fesanntes up to bringe is thus to doo :  
 Take noon but of oon yere ; for, infecunde  
 Are olde ; and frist in marche uppon thai goo  
 Her vyves ; but the males not abounde  
 In coitu, though thai be faat and rounde ;  
 A cok for hennes tweyne, and every hen  
 Wol ones sitte on eyron twies ten.

97.

A commune henne may weel uppon xv  
 Of hem be sette, and of her owen a fewe.  
 And change hem as before atte daies dene.  
 At xxx daies ende oute wol thai shewe.  
 Frist fede them daies thries v arewe  
 With barly coet and colde, and wyne besprong,  
 And after bresed whete and breses longe.

98.

Annt eyron yeve hem eke, and kepe hem fro  
 The water for the pippe, and if it have hem,  
 With garlie stamped weel and tar therto  
 Her bekes froted ofte and sadde wol save hem,  
 Her tonnges eke right as an hen to shave hem,  
 And right as hennes heel her maladie  
 Is goode ; to fatte hem eke is husbondrie.

99.

With wheet a strike, or other half a strike  
 Of barly mele enoyled, <sup>oleo sparal</sup> offed lite, <sup>in offulas redact</sup>  
 In dayes thries ten thowe make hem slyke  
 And fatte ynough, so that her appetite  
 Be served weel, and that noon offes white  
 Englayme uppon the rootes of her tonnge ;  
 For that and hunger sleth thees briddes young.

100.

The goos with grasse and water up is brought,  
 To plant and tree an opon foo is she,  
 Her bityng harmeth corne, her donnge is nought ;  
 Take for oon male of hem females thre,  
 And twies a yere deplumed may thai be ;  
 In sprynging tyme and harvest tyme ; eke make  
 For hem, yf other water wonte, a lake.

101.

For wonte of grasse on trefoil lette hem bite,  
 On gouldes wilde, or letuce, grekysh hay,  
 The skewed goos ; the brune goose as the white  
 Is not fecounde. And why ? For as thai say  
 Oute of the kynde of wilde gees cam thay.  
 Fro Marche kalendes gees to sette on broode  
 Until the day be lengest is ful goode.

102.

An hen upon thaire eyron maist thou sette  
 As of the pocok saide is all before,  
 But lest this hennes eyron sholde ought lette,  
 Ley netteles under with, and evermore  
 The laughter last : unto the modres lore  
 Is to be lefte that thai may with her children  
 Laugh and be gladde, as with hem were here eldron.

103.

Ten daies first lete hem be fedde withynne ;  
 And thenne, is Wedir faire, doo forth hem lede ;  
 But netles war, from hem thi briddes twynne,  
 And fatte hem xxx daies olde for nede ;  
 Atte moneths foure alle fatte thou maist hem fede,  
 Flour thries a day ; and lette hem not goo large ;  
 In warme and derk to clese hem I the charge.

## 104.

Eke mylde is goode also in every mete,  
 All manner puls is goode, the fitche outetake.  
 Swyne heres Brustels kepe hem lest thay etc.  
 Two parties branne with flour thees Grekes take  
 With water hoothe comyxt ; also thai make  
 Her water thries freshed every day ;  
 And ones in the nyght. This is no nay.

## 105.

Yf thou desirest that thi gees be tender ;  
 When thai in age be passed xxx daies,  
 Of figges grounde and water tempered slender  
 Gobbettes yeve thi gees. <sup>offuina</sup> But these arayes <sup>Auctor loqr.</sup>  
 To speke of here for nought but myrth and play is ;  
 Yit as myne auctor spak, so wolde I speke,  
 Seth I translate, and lothe am fro him breke.

## 106.

This doon, is other thinges for to doo :  
 Two stewes must thou make in erthe or stoone,  
 Not fer from home, and bryng water therto  
 Of sprynge, or rayne for water foul that oon <sup>aribus aquaticis</sup>  
 To swymme, also thi bestes to togoon ;  
 That other wete in hides, yerdes drie, <sup>made facias coria</sup>  
 Lupyne and other thing for husbondrie.

## 107.

For hay, for chaf, for tymber, and for redes  
 Make housyng as the list ; it is noo charge ; <sup>non refert</sup>  
 In drie and wyndie places there noo drede is  
 Of brennyng hem, and for that alle atte large  
 Away from home ordeyn hem I the charge.  
 A fyre is foul affray in thinges drie.  
 And nowe for dounge an other husbondrie :



## 108.

The myddyng, sette it wete as it may rote,  
 And saver nought, eke sette it oute of sight ;  
 The seed of thorn in it wol dede and dote.  
 Thyne asses dounge is rathest for to dight  
 A garden with ; sheep dounge is next of myght ;  
 And after goot and neet ; eke hors and mares ;  
 But dounge of swyne the werst of all thees ware is.

## 109.

Askes beth goode, and so hoot is noo dounge  
 Of foule as of the douve, a quysht outake,  
 And oon yere old is nought for herbes yonge  
 And goode for corne ; but elder thou forsake,  
 Fresh dounge is best thi medes with to make ;  
 Seeslyme al fresshe ywesh, and slyme of floode  
 With other dounge ymedled is right goode.

## 110.

Thi garden and thyne orchard, sette hem nygh.  
 The garden from thi mydding softe enclyne,  
 That juce of that amonge thyne herbes sigh ;  
 And water in sum stede away declyne.  
 Eke yf the lacke a welle, a winche enmyne ;  
 And if thou may not soo, lette make a stewe  
 With rayne water thyne herbes to renewe.

## 111.

And yf that help it not, lete delve it depe  
 Three foote or foure, in wyse of pastynge,  
 That it may in itself his moister kepe.  
 And every lande, although a man may brynge  
 With help of dongyng hit into tylling,  
 Yit is the chalk or claylonde for to eschew,  
 And from the rede also thi garth remewe.

## 112.

Eke yf thi garth be drie in his nature,  
 Depart it, and in wynter southward delve  
 Hit uppe, and in the somer doo this cure,  
 Upon Septemtrion to overwhelpe  
 Hit upsodowne; thus wol hit save it selve.  
 The garth eke closed is in dyvers wyse;  
 Dyversed wittes dyversly devyse.

## 113.

Hym liketh best a daubed wough, and he  
 Wol have a wall of clay and stoon, and stones  
 Withouten clay an other wol it be;  
 A nother with a diche aboute ygone is;  
 War that, for that the werst of everichon is.  
 That diche wol drie up thi humours of thi londe,  
 Yit yf thi garth be mayree, a diche may stonde.

## 114.

Oon planteth thorns, an other soueth seedes;  
rubri, v mori, v bati But bremble seede and seed of houndes thorn  
rubam caninum  
 Doo weel, and geder that as ripe as nede is;  
 With fitches flour, ywatered well beforne,  
 Lete medled all this seede, lest it be lorn.  
 In ropes kepe this confect meddissyng  
 Until the time of veer or of spryngyng.

## 115.

Thenne eree a double forowe III foote a sonder,  
 As ferre as thou wolt close, and deep a foote;  
 This ropes with thi seedes cloos hem under  
 Light moolde aboute, and on anoon lete wrote.  
 This doon, at twenty daies end a roote  
radix  
 In erthe, a branch in aier wol reche aboute.  
 Now rayle hem, and of closure is noo doute.

## 116.

Lete veer go delve, yf hervest shall go sowe ;  
 If veer shall sowe it, hervest must go delve ;  
 So shall her eitheres werke been overblowe  
 With colde or hoothe under the signes twelve.  
 Mark oute thi tables, <sup>beddes</sup> ichon by hem selve,  
 Sixe foote in brede and xri in length is best  
 To clense and make on eidy side honest.

## 117.

In places wete or moist make eidy brynke  
 Two foote in heght, a foote in places drie,  
 And yf thyne humour from thyne herbes synke,  
 Dispose it soo that it from places hie  
 Descende, and doo thi lande to fructifie ;  
 And thens to an other part proeede,  
 And so to every part, as it is nede.

## 118.

To sowe and graffe although I sette a tyme,  
 Yit graffe and sowe as men doo the beside ;  
 In places cold thyne hervest sede <sup>celeriter</sup> betyme  
 Is best to haast ; in springyng seed to abyde.  
 In places hoothe eke change her either tyde.  
 To graffe and sowe in growing of the moone,  
 And kytte and mowe in wanyng is to doon.

## 119.

For blichenyng and myst take chaf and raf, <sup>rubigine</sup> <sup>nebulis</sup> <sup>paloss</sup> <sup>pargamenta</sup>  
 And ley it on thi lande in dyverse stedes,  
 And when thou seest the myst, lete brenne up chaf  
 And raf, eke as for hail a russet wede is <sup>grandini</sup>  
 To keet upon the querne, also it nede is <sup>molam</sup>  
 All bloody axes bere and heven threte <sup>crasata</sup> <sup>secures</sup> <sup>caelum</sup>  
 In hardy wyse as hym to slayne or bete.

## 120.

Girde eke thi garth aboute in vynes white ;  
 Or, sprad the wynges oute, sette up an oule.  
 Whi laugh ye so ? this crafte is not so lite.  
 Or take thi spades, rake, knyf, and shovelle  
 And eidy tole in beres grees defoule,  
 Eke sum have stamped oile with grees of beres  
 To greece her vyne-knyf for dyveres deres.

## 121.

But that a man must doo full prively,  
 That never a warkman wite, and this is goode  
 For frost, and myst, and wormes sekirly.  
 But as I trust in Crist that shedde his bloode  
 For us, whos tristeth this Y holde him wode.  
 Myne auctor eke (whoo list in him travaille !)  
 Seith this prophaned thyng may nought availe.

## 122.

Oil dregges fresshe for gnattes and for snayles  
 Or chambre soote is goode to kest aboute ;  
 For anntes eke an oules herte availe is  
 To putte upon her bedde, and alle the route  
 A trayne of chalk or askes holdeth oute.  
 Thi seed with juce of rucul or syngrene  
 To wete up sleth the rucul, as men wene.

## 123.

Eke figtree askes oon on rucul throweth,  
 An other hangeth uppe or soweth squylle,  
 The thridde among his wortes chitches soweth,  
 For wondres fele and, he saith, as to kille  
 The rucul and fele other thinges ille,  
 A menstruous ungerd wommon, unshod  
 Untressed eke, about to goone is goode.

## 124.

Floode crabbes here and ther to crucifie,  
 He seth, is goode ; but bestes forto sle  
 That dooth thi vynes harm let sle the fie,  
 The cantharide in roses that we se ;  
 Put hem in oile, and roton when thai be,  
 The vyne if thou shalt kytte enointe afor  
 The knyf with this ; for this craft is noo scorn.

## 125.

Oile dregges and oxe galle is goode for gnattes,  
 So that the beddes therwith thou enoynte,  
 Eke oile and yvy grounde is goode as that is,  
 Or waterleches brende an other point is.  
 Thi wortes, that the wermes not <sup>se destruant</sup> desyoint,  
 The seedes in a tortous skynne thou drie,  
 Or mynte among thi cool thou multiplie.

## 126.

Eke fitches brese, of hem thair <sup>radix</sup> radissh springeth,  
 Or rape, or thus take juce of henbane  
 With soure aysell, and hem togeder mengeth,  
 And kest hem on your cool in every pane ;  
 Ereither wol be worterwormes bane. <sup>publicq olerum (sic: but quere "pulices.")</sup>  
 Brenne her and ther the heedles garlic seesle,  
 The stynke of it for hockes help and hele is. <sup>contra campas</sup>

## 127.

Thi vyne knyf with garlic forto frote  
 Is goode, eke cley and brymstone yf me brenne  
 About a vyne, anoon this hockes rote,  
 Or hocke in water yf men seethe, and thenne  
 About in all thi garden do it renne,  
 It sleth the hocke, but bring it from withoute  
 Myne auctor saith, fro sum garth nygh aboute.

## 128.

Upon the whetstoon sle the cantaride,  
 The cantaride a vyne yf she enfeste;  
 And Democrite he saith that mys betyde  
 Shal neither seede nor tree by worme, or beest,  
 Of flood, or see, x crabbes yf thou kest  
 With water in an erthen potte ywrie  
 Ten daies throuth until the vapur die.

## 129.

And herbe or tree to moiste in the licour  
 Iche viiith day is suffisaunt, saith he,  
 To heel and helpe hem forth in fruite and flour,  
 But holde aye on it holpon til thou see.  
 Pysmires yit yf thou wol make hem flee  
 Kest origane ystamped with brymstoone  
 Uppon thaire hoole, and oute thay flee anoone.

## 130.

The same is doon with cokille shelles brente;  
 Eke brymstoon and galbane oute chaseth gnattes,  
 Also the fleen wol sleyn on thi pavyment,  
 Oildregges ofte yspronge eke myse and rattes  
 This dregges mo may sle than dooth thi cattes,  
 So it be thicke and poured in a ponne  
 The mous by nyghtertale on it wol fonne.

## 131.

Elebur blak with fatte, or brede, or chese,  
 Or floure comyxt and offred hem wol slen;  
 Cucumber wilde and colouynt doo brese;  
 The juce will sle the myse as dyvers men  
 Have saide; A yit an other crafte sleth fleen:  
 Watered cucumber seede, or comyn grounde,  
 Lupyne, or psilotre kest on the grounde.

132.

And for the feld mous, <sup>the auctor</sup> Apuleius  
 Saith goode is alle his greyne in oxes galle  
 A man to stepe, and sowe hem thenne : eke thus  
 With affadille upclose her hooles alle ;  
 Thai gnawe it oute, but dede downe shal thai falle,  
 Right forth withall thai shall it not eschewe,  
 The moldewarp the Grekes thus pursue :

133.

Thai thurle a nutte, and stuffe it so withinne  
 With brymstoon, chaf, and cedria, thees three.  
 Then alle her hooles ther the molde is ynne  
 Save oon, the moste, uppe stopped must thai be.  
 The fyred nuttes smolder shall thorowe fle  
 This grettest hoole, as wol the wynde him serve  
 And either shall thees talpes voide or sterve.

- 134.

Yit for the mous, kest oken asks soo  
 Aboute her hooles in it that thai may trede ;  
 The scabbe anoon will ryse and hem fordoo.  
 For eddres, spirites, monstres, thyng of drede,  
 To make a smoke and stynke is goode in dede.  
 Brent hertshorne, or gootes cleen, or rootes  
 Of lillie brente, or galbane all this bote is.

135.

The Greek saith eke that yf a cloude arise  
 Of breses <sup>locustas</sup> smert, men muste in hous hem hide,  
 And thai wol voide. A crafte eke thai devyse  
 That, breses seyn, men fle to hous and byde  
 In hous, and as thai come, awaie thai glide.  
 Cucumber wilde, or sour lupyne in drestes  
 Of oil comyxt wol dryve away thees beestes. <sup>locustas</sup>

## 136.

And other sayne that scorpions and thees,  
 Yf sume of hem be brent wol voide ichone ;  
 And other als seyne, hockes for to lese,  
 Kest figtree aske on hem, and, but thai goone,  
 Oil dregges and oxe uren iliche anoon  
 Let mynge and boile, and when it coled is,  
 Byrayne aboute uppon thi wortes this.

## 137.

The greek saith that a best prasocoride  
 The garth anoieth muche, and remedie  
 Is this for that, a rammes panch athide  
 Alle lightly soo there as thai multiplie,  
 When Phebus chare hath goon aboute it twye,  
 There shalt thou fynde hem heped, sle hem there  
 A twie or thrie, and thai ne shall the dere.

## 138.

Yit este for hail a crocodilles hide,  
 A see calf skynne, or of a lyonesse  
 Bere uppe aboute thi lande on eidy side,  
 And whenne thou dredest hail or hevynesse  
 Lete honge it in thi yates or ingress  
 Of hous or towne, or thus in thi right hande  
 A myres tortous bere aboute thi lande.

## 139.

But bere it bolt upright, and tourne agayne  
 Right as thou went, and ley her downe upright,  
 And undersette her crooked bakke that mayne  
 Her lacke agayne to tourne herself downeright.  
 This <sup>(is)</sup> a crafte of witte, a thyng of myght,  
 For all the lande that thou haste goon aboute  
 For cloudes wick is save, this is noo doute.



## 140.

When other seen derk cloudes over hove,  
 The shappe of it thai take in a myrroure,  
 And outhur thus from hem his harme thai shove,  
 Or to sum other doubleth his terroure ;  
 For every mychief is a see calf hide  
 Amydde a vyne another thyng socoure  
 Aboute a quyk calf gridde on eidy side.

## 141.

Thi seedes with cocumber rootes grounde  
 Lete stepe, and save of eidy mysse thai are ;  
 An other thinge that lightly may be founde,  
 The calvair of an <sup>non virgins</sup> horsed asse or mare,  
 Sette that uppe : that wol make all fecundare  
 On every side as ferre as it may se.  
 Thus saithe the booke, and thus I trowe it be.

## 142.

Thi thressing floor be not ferre of awaie,  
 For beryng and for steling, as the gise is  
 Of servauntes ; of flynt eke, if thou may,  
 This floor thou make, or hewen stoones besides,  
 Or water myxt with grounde, the thridde avis is,  
 Upshette aboute, and trampled with catell  
 Maade playne and dried after, wol do well.

## 143.

And nygh it make a place high, plain, and pure,  
 When nede is therto cave upon thi corne,  
 This wol availle, and make it longe endure.  
 Then after to thi berne it may be borne.  
 Eke, lest thi greyne in shoures sholde be lorne,  
 Right hoolsum is to have an hous besyde,  
 That for a shoure in that it myght abide.

144.

But make it high, on everie half perfiable,  
 Ferre fro thi garth, thyne orchard, and thi vynes ;  
 For, right as chaf and dounge is profitable  
 On rootes, and upbryngeth brede and wynes ;  
 Right so the same upon the top a pynne is,  
 The floures and the buddes wol thai drie,  
 And bore them through, and make hem so to die.

145.

The Bee-yerd be not ferre, but faire asyde  
 Gladsum, secrete, and hoothe, alle from the wynde,  
 Square, and so bigge into hit that no thef stride.  
 Thaire floures in coloures or her kynde  
 In busshes, treen, and herbes thai may finde ;  
 Herbe origane, and tyme, and violette,  
 Eke affadille and savery therby sette.

146.

Of tyme is wex aud hony maade swetest,  
 Of tymbra, peleton ; and origon  
 Is next to that ; and after hem is best  
 Of rosmary, and savery, thenne is noone  
 So goode as thai, but rustik swete echoon.  
 Septemtrion sette treen upon his syde  
 And bushes aboute under the walle devyde.

147.

And after busshes herbes in the playne,  
 A sobre brook amyde or elles a welle  
 With pulles<sup>lacunas</sup> faire, and bowes or it trayne  
 So lanch and rare on hem that bees may dwelle  
 And drynke ynough, but ferre awaie propelle  
 Horrend odoure of kychen, bath, gutters ;  
 Eddres to sleyn and foules oute to fere is.

148.

The keper pure and chaste and with hem ofte,  
 His hyves havying redy forto take  
 His swarmes yonge, and sette hem faire on lofte.  
 The smell of dounge and crabbes brende aslake  
 Away from hem ; and places that wol make  
 A voice ayein as ofte as men wol calle  
 Is nought for hem, eke nought is titunalle.

149.

This <sup>lampwort</sup> thapsia, this wermoot, and elebre,  
 Cucumber wild, and every bitter kynde  
 Of herbe is nought for hem, as hem is lever  
 Lete make her hyves all of thynner rynde,  
 It is not angry hoot, nor cold unkynde.  
 Take ferules eke, or saly twygges take  
 Ye may, but potters hyves thou forsake.

150.

Or make an hyve of bordes like a stonde,<sup>cupe</sup>  
 For that is goode, or hewe an holowe tree,  
 And therof make hem hyves into stonde,  
 But III foote high on stulpes must ther be  
 A floor for hem, wel whited thou it se,  
 So made that lysardes may not ascende,  
 Ne wicked worme this catell forto offende.

151.

Thyne hyves heer thou sette a lite asonder,  
 Her entre tourne it faire upon the southe ;  
 No larger then a bee may trede in under.  
 Wickettes two or three thou make hem couthe,  
 That yf a wicked worme oon holes mouthe  
 Besiege or stoppe, an other open be,  
 And from the wicked worme thus save thi bee.

152.

To bey thi been beholde hem riche and fulle,  
 Or preve hem by thaire murmure magnitude,  
 Or se the swarme and carie hem yf thou wolle  
 By myght upon thi bak, hem softe enclude,  
 And towarde nyght hir yates thou reclude.  
 But bey hem not too ferre oute from thyne eire,  
 For change of ayer may putte hem in dispaire.

153.

Thre daies thenne it is to taken hede  
 Yf alle the swarme oute atte the yates goo,  
 And if thai doo, then it is forto drede  
 Lest thai purpoos in haast to ben agoo.  
 Yit wene men that thay wol not do soo  
 About her hoole an heifer calves <sup>vituli</sup> <sup>scercus</sup> thoste  
 So that thou cleme, and this litel coste.

154.

It is not strange, if water wol suffice,  
 An husbonde on his baathe to be bethought ;  
 For therof may plesaunce and helthe aryse.  
 Towarde the sonne on drie it must be wrought,  
 Southwest and southe the <sup>lightes</sup> sonnes ynne be brought,  
 That alle the day it may be warme and light ;,  
 The celles suspensures thus thou dight :

155.

First floore it ii foote thicke, enclyninge softe  
 The forneis warde, so that the flamme upbende  
 The celles forto chere and chaufe olofte ;  
 And <sup>piles</sup> piles maade of tiles must ascende  
 Two foote and half, and two foote wide attende  
 Hem forto sette, and upon hem thou sprede  
 A marble floor, or tyle it yit for nede.

156.

A myliair of lede, the bottom brasse  
 Anende the feetes sette it so withoute  
 The fourneis, and the fire ther undre **passé**,  
 A conduite cold into it bringe aboute  
 Make pipes water warme inwarde to spoute,  
 The celles square oblonge as **x** in brede,  
 As for **xv** in length is oute to sprede.

157.

For hete in streite is gretter then in large,  
 But seetes make yfourmed as the list,  
 The somer celles lightes thou enlarge  
 Upon the north, but winter celles wist<sup>quatis (sic)</sup>  
 From north ; the southern light is best, as wist<sup>v. satum (sic)</sup>  
 Is well ; and all the wesseh oute of thi bathes  
 The garden thorowe to go therto no scathe is.

158.

The chambres in the bathes may be wrought  
 As cisterne is, but wol be well the stronger,  
 And other waies fele, yf thai besought,  
 As clene as it, but thai be yit unstronger.  
 Thi winter hous to sette, eke studie lenger  
 Uppon thi bathe ; for lo the groundes made,  
 And hete of it thi winter house wol glade.

159.

Convenient it is to knowe, of bathes  
 While speche is made, what malthes hoothe and colde  
 Are able, ther as chynyng clifte or scathe is  
 To make it hoole, and water well to holde.  
 For bathes hoothe ammonyake is tolde  
 Right goode with brymstone resolute ypitte<sup>positum</sup>  
 Aboute in eidy chynyng, clifte, or slitte.

160.

Or thus : hardde pitche, and wex, take even weight,  
 And herdde with pix liquide herto eche  
 An halvendele, and grounden shelles dight  
 With flour of lyme : al thees comixt wol deche  
 Every defaute, and all the woundes leche.  
 While wex, harrde, pitch, remysse ammonyake,  
 Thees three comixt therefore is goode to take.

161.

Or thus : ammonyak remysse, and figges  
 With pix liquide and herrde sore ygrounde  
 To cleme upon right suffisiannly bigg is ;  
 Or floure of lyme in oil, yf thou confounde  
 And helde it in, upheleth it by grounde,  
 But kepe it drie awhile, eke boles bloode  
 With oil and floure of lyme admyxt is goode.

162.

Eke oister shelles drie and alle to grounde  
 With harde pitche and with fygges doth the same ;  
 But malthes colde in other crafte thou founde,  
 Ox bloode with pitche and synder alle to frame,  
 And make it like a salve, and overflame  
 Iche hoole and chene, or siften askes clene  
 And sevum molton helde in eidy chene.

163.

And yf thi water come in abundance,  
 As moche as may thi bathes overflowe,  
 Thi bakhous therwith all thou maist avance,  
 A water mylle herwith thou maist avowe  
 To make, in sparing beestes that shal plowe,  
 As hors and ox, and so with litel care  
 Shal water cornes grynde and beestes spare.

164.

Make redie nowe iche nedeful instrument,  
 Lete se the litel plough, the large also,  
 The rigges forto enhance, and uppe to hent  
 Ther as the lande is moist, yit toles moo  
 The mattok, twyble, picoys, forth to goo,  
 The sawes longe and shortte, eke knyves crooked  
 For vyne and bough with sithes, sicles hocked,

165.

And croked sithes kene upon the bake  
 Showe forth also the cannibe knyves lite  
 In plantes yonge a branch awaie to take,  
 The hokes that the fern awaie shall bite,  
 And billes all thees brerers up to smyte,  
 Set rakes, crookes, adses, and bycornes,  
 And double bited axes for thees thornes.

166.

Here must be markyng yrons for oure beestes,  
 And toles forto geldde, and clype, and shere ;  
 Eke lether cotes us to were honest is,  
 So thair cuculle aboute oure brolles were,  
 And bootes, cocurs, myttens, mot we were :  
 For husbondes and hunters all this goode is ;  
 For thai mot walk in breres and in woodes.

Palladii primus liber explicit : assit ut unus

Alpha vocatus et  $\Omega$  det mihi Christus homo !

## G L O S S A R Y

## C O R R I G E N D A .

The Reader is requested to make the following slight alterations with his pen :—

STANEA.	LINE.	
8	7	for their read thin.
9	7	„ thir „ ther.
10	3	„ ayem „ ayein.
20	5	dele comma at <i>dede</i> .
22	1	for rouke read ronke.
22	4	„ douged „ donged.
27	2	„ upbe „ uppe.
41	5	„ posi „ pose.
45	3	„ Il „ It.
51	7	„ steidens „ stridens.
54	2	dele comma at <i>lete</i> .
59	6	for gluttena read glutinosa.
62	4	„ tilpanyug „ tilpavyng.
90	2	„ teil „ tail.
90	5	dele comma at end.
118	6	for thi read the.
119	1	„ neblua „ nebula.
126	6	„ seeles „ sceles.
130	3	dele comma at end.
130	4	insert comma at “ ysprong.”
148	2	for havying read havyng.
153	6	„ scercus „ stercus.
165	5	„ brerers „ breres.

ridge's "Glossary."

BESILY = busily, anxiously.

BETE = beat.

BETHOUGHT = thoughtful.

BEY = buy.

BICORNES, Lat. = pitchforks.

BLICHENYNG = mildew.

BLYVE = quickly.

BOLE = bull.

BONCHIEF = opposite to mischief.

BYRAYNE = shower.

CLESE = close.

CLOCK = to cluck as a hen.

COCCURS = leggings.

COLUMBINE = dove-coloured.

COLVER HOUS = dove-house.

COOL = cole, cabbage.

COORS = corse, body.

CORNEL = corner.

COUTHE = can, s. 151.

CUCULLE, Lat. = hood.

CURE = care.



164.

Make redie nowe iche nedeful instrument,  
 Lete se the litel plough, the large also,  
 The rigges forto enhance, and uppe to hent  
 Ther as the lande is moist, ~~vit teles~~

---

Alpha vocatus et  $\Omega$  det mihi Christus homo !

---

## G L O S S A R Y .

## A

- A** = and, s. 131.  
**ABOVE**, in s. 29, seems used as a substantive = superior.  
**ADELL** = much, a deal, s. 72, 89.  
**AGOO**, ad. = agoing.  
**ALITE** = lightly.  
**ANENDE** = anent, opposite.  
**ANCOON** = anon, presently. In s. 115  
 "on anoon" is remarkable.  
**AREW** = in a row.  
**ASKES** = ashes.  
**ASLAKE**, v. = remove.  
**ASSISE** = to place.  
**ASSURE**—verb neut., s. 31, as in Chaucer,  
 "Troilus," 1358.  
**ASTITE** = quickly, soon.  
**ATASTE ALORE** = learn by the taste.  
**ATHIDE** = cover, A. S. thydan.  
**AYEIN** = again, s. 10.  
**AYSBLL** = vinegar.

## B

- BAKE** = back.  
**BEGOON** = adorned, covered. S. 90, gold-  
 begoon = overspread with gold, as  
 woe-begone, full of woe, *vide* Cole-  
 ridge's "Glossary."  
**BESILY** = busily, anxiously.  
**BETE** = beat.  
**BETHOUGHT** = thoughtful.  
**BEY** = buy.  
**BICORNES**, Lat. = pitchforks.  
**BLICHENTYNG** = mildew.  
**BLYVE** = quickly.  
**BOLE** = bull.  
**BONCHIEF** = opposite to mischief.  
**BYRAYNE** = shower.

- BREDE** = broad, breadth.  
**BREDE** = bread.  
**BRESES** = locusts.  
**BROLLES** = heads, brows, s. 166.  
**BUT** = unless, s. 136.  
**BUT IF**, s. 14 = unless.  
**BUXOM** = obedient.  
**BYDENE** = immediately.

## C

- CALCATORY** = wine-press.  
**CALVAIR**, Lat. = skull.  
**CANNIBE** = crooked, applied to knife in s.  
 165, suggests enquiry.  
**CAST** = determine.  
**CAVE UPON** in s. 143, does not seem to  
 correspond very intelligibly with the  
 Latin "in quem frumenta transfusa  
 refrigerentur."  
**CHAUFE**, Fr. = warm.  
**CHAVE** = to cover with chaff.  
**CHEES** = chuse.  
**CHENE** = chink.  
**CHICH** = to chuck as a hen.  
**CHYNE** = a chink, or crack.  
**CLEEN** = claws, hoofs.  
**CLEME** = daub, smear, A. S. clamian.  
**CLESE** = close.  
**CLOCK** = to cluck as a hen.  
**COCURS** = leggings.  
**COLUMBINE** = dove-coloured.  
**COLYER HOUS** = dove-house.  
**COOL** = cole, cabbage.  
**COORS** = corse, body.  
**CORNEL** = corner.  
**COUTHE** = can, s. 151.  
**CUCULLE**, Lat. = hood.  
**CURE** = care.

## V

CYMENT = cement.

## D

DECHE, v. = cover, Germ. decken.

DEDE = die.

DEME = judge.

DEMENE = manage.

DENE = ten.

DERE = injury.

DERE, v. = to injure.

DISOYNT = destroy.

Do = make, s. 117.

DOLVE = delved, dug.

DOTE = decay.

DOOM = judgment.

DREBES, A. S. = dregs.

## E

ECHATE = Hecate, the moon.

ECHÉ = add, s. 150.

EFTÉ = again, or after.

EGGE = edge.

EGHEN = eyes.

EIDY = every.

EITHERES = either.

EKE = also.

EKE = destroy, s. 87.

ELBBE = Holebore.

ENARMB = embrace, protect.

ENLAYME = to stick.

ENMYNE, v. = sink or dig.

ENTERE = intimate, favourite. In s. 40,  
dere entere = dear favourite.

EREE, v. = to plough, to ear.

EXON = oxen..

EYRON = eggs.

## F

FELE, A. S. = many.

FENSTELL, Lat. = window.

FEB or FERRE = far.

FERE, v. = to remove, s. 147.

FERNE = to cover with fern.

FEVEREE = February.

FLETTE = floor, flat, s. 68.

FONNE = catch.

FOOTE = to found, to establish.

FOR, in many places = against, as s. 74.

FORDOO = destroy.

FORTHI = therefore, for this.

FOULE = fowl.

FROTE = rub.

## G

GARTH = garden.

GASEYN, s. 6 = puddle. This, if not the same word with "Geason" used by Spencer (vi., 4,) and our Author in subsequent books, seems closely allied to it. After falling into long disuse, it revived under the form *gas* in the days of Van Helmont. The root is A. S. *gæssen* = rare.

GIRE = gird, protect.

GLADE = gladden.

GRECE = stops, s. 167.

GROYSSING = gritty.

GOULDES = endive.

GURGULIONS = weevils.

## H

HALVNBLE = half-part.

HELE = healthy.

HENT = to follow.

HERDE, adj. = hard.

HERDE, sub. = tow.

HERVEST = autumn.

HEWE = hue, colour.

HOCKES = caterpillars.

HOLE = wholesome.

HOLSUM = wholesome.

HUSBONDE = husbandman.

## I

ILICHE = equally.

IMPLAYNE = playster.

INWITH = within.

## K

KIRP = incision, cutting.

KIRTILS = coats.

KYTTE = cut.

## L

LEGGÉ = to lay.

LEIR = lair, place.

LERE = learn.

LESE = lose, destroy.

LEVER = rather, more desirable, s. 149.

LIXING = aspect, favour.

LITE = little.

LOITH = sifteth.

LONGES = lungs.

LONGE-woo = lung-woe, consumption.

LUKE = lukewarm, tepid.

LYGGB = to lie.

### M

MALTHES = cements, stuccos, s. 159.

MAYNE = vigour, main.

ME—This is not always the personal pronoun, but seems to be an abbreviation of *Men*, and corresponds to the French *On*. Thus in the first stanza: "What mon me moost enforme," = what man is to be instructed, or one has to inform: and so s. 127.

MEDESSYNG = medicine.

MEDLED = mixed.

MENE = middle, intermediata.

MENG = mix.

MIRT = myrtle.

MOLDE, MOLDEWARP = mole.

MYDDYNG = dunghill.

MYLIAIR, Lat. = a vessel with pipes for supplying a bath.

MYSCHVE = fare ill.

### N

NAMELY = especially.

NATH = hath not.

NEET = bull.

NELDE = needle.

NORICE = nurse.

NOYUS, Fr. = noxious.

NYGHTERTALE, s. 130, three words joined.

NYL = ne will, will not.

### O

OFFED = divided into cakes, offas.

OR = ere, before, s. 20.

OR = o'er, *i.e.*, over, s. 147.

OR LONG, in s. 26, seems to mean overlong.

OSTE = oven.

OTHER = otherwise, else, s. 99.

OUTETAKE = except.

OUTWITH = without, beyond.

OVERFLAME = spread.

OVERWHELVE, s. 112 = overwhelm, as in Chaucer.

OVERWEIN = cover over.

### P

PANE = pain, malady.

PARGET = plaister of a wall.

PASTYNYNG, Lat. = preparing ground for vines.

PICOYS = pickaxe.

PMYNT occurs in s. 33 and s. 40. It is evidently an abbreviation, intended perhaps for prominent, used substantively for a *President* or *Foreman*. In each case it is the same word in the original, *viz.*, Præsul.

PORTULAKE, Lat. = purslain.

POURY = muddy.

PRASOCORIDE, Gk. = a kind of moth.

PROPHANED = revealed, made public, s. 121.

PULLES = pools.

PYNNE = pain, injury, s. 144.

### Q

QUERNE = windmill.

QUYSHT, s. 109 = a reed-quest, avis palustris.

### R

RAF = rubbish.

RATHE = early. To RATHE = too soon.

RATHEST = soonest.

REMEWE = remove.

RENE = reign, jurisdiction.

RENNE = run.

RIGGES = ridges.

RIGHT BY = close.

RUCUL, the animal = cankerworm.

RUCUL, the plant = rocket.

### S

SADDE = firm, steady.

SAUFLY = safely.

SAVE = safe.

SAVE OF = safe from.

SAVELLES, Fr. sable = sands.

SEDNESS = sowing.

SEGGES = sedges.

SEKERLY = surely.

SEVUM, Lat. = tallow.

**SHENT** = ruined.  
**SKEWED** = variegated.  
**SLE** = slay.  
**SMERT** = sudden.  
**SOUGH** = hock or pastern.  
**SPLAY** = display.  
**STAPHYSAGRE** = wild vine.  
**STEDE** = a place.  
**STERVE** = die, Ger. sterben.  
**STEW** = pond.  
**STONDE** = a cup, s. 150.  
**STRANGE** = strong, s. 16.  
**STRE** = straw.  
**STREYT** = narrow, little.  
**STULPES** = stumps, s. 150.  
**STYNTE** = forbear.  
**SUMDELE** = some portion, somewhat.  
**SWERDE** = sword.  
**SWERD** = sword.  
**SWETE** = sweat.  
**SYNGRENE** = houseleek.

## T

**TABLES** = garden beds.  
**TALGH** = tallow.  
**TE**, s. 134, seems an error for *the*.  
**THATER**, s. 15 = the water.  
**THERE, THERE AS** = where (*e.g.*, "there as thowe casteth dwelle" = where you resolve to live).  
**THORLE, OR THURLE** = bore, perforate, A. S. thirlian.  
**THOSTE**, A. S. = dung.  
**THRIDDEDELE** = a third part.  
**THROUT** = thereout, outside, s. 128.  
**TIBURTINE** = brought from Tibur, or Tivoli.  
**TOGOON, v.** = go to, adire.  
**TOLE** = tool.  
**TO SORE** = too sore, too decidedly.  
**TRICLYNE**, Lat. tricladium = dining room.  
**TWYBLE** = axe.  
**TWYNNE** = separate, depart.  
**TWIS** = twice.

## U V

**UCH** = each, s. 65.  
**UMVIRONNE** = surrounded.

**UNLEEST** = not least.  
**UNLENE** = unlean, *i.e.*, fat.  
**UPSODOWNE** = upside down.  
**URE** = use.  
**VEER** = spring.  
**VOIDE** = depart.  
**VULTURNUS**, Lat. = N. E. wind. In s. 21 the *ordo verborum* is "Yet if he let vulturinus or other blasts to overset or burn a vine, &c."

## W

**WAR** = beware of.  
**WARY** = to curse, A. S. werigan.  
**WEDE** = garment.  
**WESSHE** = wash, dirty water.  
**WICK** = evil, wickedness.  
**WINCHE** = tank, s. 110.  
**WIRCHE** = to work.  
**WIST** = direct, bend, s. 167.  
**WITE** = defend.  
**WODE** = mad.  
**WOMBE** = stomach.  
**WONDER** = adv., ss. 54, 67.  
**WONES** = apartments.  
**WORTES** = cabbages.  
**WOUH** or **WOWE** = wall.  
**WRIE** = to cover.  
**WRIE** = to twist or bend, the root of awry.  
**WROTH** = rot.  
**WRYNGES** = presses.

## Y

**YATES** = gates.  
**YE** = yea, s. 23.  
**YGONE** = gone; *ygone aboute* = surrounded.  
**YEME** = to care, to attend, the origin of yeman or yeoman.  
**YERDES** = twigs, virgas.  
**YEVE** = give.  
**YO**, A. S. = clay, plaster.  
**YOLGH** = yellow.  
**YORNE** = often.  
**YOTE** = to pour.  
**YSPRONGE** = sprinkled.  
**YWRIB** = covered.  
**YWESH** = washed.

## A N C I E N T W I L L S .

(No 4.)

By H. W. KING.

EARLY in the fifteenth century Sir John Montgomery, a renowned knight, supposed to have been a native of Scotland, obtained the Manor of Faulkborne, but by what means is unknown. He was created a Knight of the Bath at S. George's Feast held at Caen, was famous for many military exploits during the wars in France, where he was Privy Counsellor to the Regent, John Duke of Bedford, Captain of the strong castle of Arques and other fortresses, Bailiff of Caux, and had the honour of being nominated in the scrutiny of the Order of the Garter 23rd Hen. VI. He is the first in the list of the Gentry of Essex returned by the Commissioners in 1433. His death happened in 1448 or 1449, at which time he was possessed of the Manor of Faulkborne and other considerable estates in this county. By Elizabeth his wife, sister of Ralph Boteler, Baron Sudley, first widow of Sir Roger Norbury and secondly of Sir William Heron, he had two sons, John and Thomas, and three daughters, Anne, unmarried in 1489, Alice, wife of John Fortescue, afterwards of Robert Langley, and lastly of Edmund Wiseman; another Alice wife of Clement Spice. Their mother (commonly called Lady Elizabeth Say)\* died in 1464, possessed of the Manor of Faulkborne and the advowson of the Church. Her second

\* "By a far-fetched courtesy," as Morant remarks, "being only the relict of Sir William Heron, styled Lord Say by reason of his marriage with Elizabeth the daughter and heiress of the Lord Say." Sir William Heron was summoned to Parliament, *jure uxoris*, from 13 Nov., 1393, to 25 Aug., 1404, when he died s. p., but was never styled Baron Say in the Writs of Summons.

son, Sir Thomas Montgomery, then aged 30, succeeded her.

A brief introductory sketch of the history of the family, derived exclusively from Morant, appears necessary to enable the general reader to understand the references in

**THE WILL OF SIR THOMAS MONTGOMERY, OF FAULKBORNE HALL, KT., KNIGHT BANNERET, AND KNIGHT OF THE GARTER, WHO DIED IN 1494.**

“He was,” says Morant, “one of the most eminent men of his time; bred up from his infancy in the Court of King Henry VI.; one of the Mareschalls of his Hall; Keeper of the Exchange and of the Money in the Tower of London; and [held] the Wardenship of the Coinage of Gold and Silver within the kingdom.”

“Having the art of adapting himself to all changes, he became one of the greatest favourites, and of the Cabinet, to King Edward IV., who heaped upon him places of trust and profit: as Stewardship of Havering-atte-Bower, of the Castle of Hadleigh and of the Forest of Essex; the Constableness of Bristol, and of the Castle of Caen, and the Treasurership of Ireland, all for life. Was created a Knight, a Knight Banneret, and at length a Knight of the honourable Order of the Garter; and employed in embassies and affairs of the greatest consequence. In 1477 he was one of the Knights of the Shire for this county. He appears to have been as great a favourite with King Richard III. as with his predecessor, for Richard granted him the whole estate of John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, in this county. But he was not much enriched by this gift; since, upon the Usurper’s fall at Bosworth, the Earl of Oxford recovered his estates. He was likewise in favour under King Henry VII. He died 11th January, 1494, aged 55 (61 ?),\* and was buried in the Chapel of our Lady which he had made at Tower Hill, in the Abbey of S. Mary of Graces. He had two wives, but left no issue by either. His first was Philippa, daughter

\* Morant, citing an *Inquisition* (5 Edw. IV.) taken on the death of Lady Montgomery, says that her son Thomas was 30 years old in 1464, consequently he was 61 in 1494-5.

and co-heir of John Helion, of Bumpsted-Helion, by Editha, daughter and heir of Thomas Rolf, of Gosfield Hall, Esq. The second was Lora, daughter of Sir Edward Barkley, of Beverston, and widow of John Blount, Lord Mountjoy; re-married, after Sir Thomas's decease, to Thomas, Earl of Ormond. The principal heir of Sir Thomas was John Fortescue, Esq., eldest son of his sister Alice, who became seated at Faulkborne Hall."\*

So much of the will of Sir Thomas Montgomery as is of more especial archæological and historical interest, I give in the orthography of the Register :—

**IN DEI NOIE, AMEN.** I Syr Thomas Mongomery, Knyght, being at folkeborne in helth of body and reste of sowle, the xxvij day of July the yere of oure lord god mcccclxxxix and the iiij<sup>th</sup> yere of kyng henry the vij<sup>th</sup>, make my will and testament by good deliberacion and by the advice of my goode frendis and trusty in this mann' of forme following. ffurst I bequeith my soule to almighty god, to oure lady saint Mary, and to all the company of hevyn, and my body or bones, whersowyr I dye, to be buried in th'abby at towre hyll of london, in the chappell of our lady that I have late made suere,† and I bequeith to the garnishing of the said chappell ther xx li. Also I wyll that my said place called Bowre hall in mersy ‡ in the countie of Essex goo to the said new abbey, soo that they be bounde to the meire of london and to the aldremen to keepe owre lady masse dayly by note in the forsaid chappell, to pray for me, my wyfes, my modyr, my brothur John, my uncle Thomas and Alyson Spice § and all my frendys sowlly; and whenne masse is done to say deprofundis to say (*sic*) aboute my tombe, and also to pay to the meyre of london that shalbe any yere whenne he comyth to the keping of my obite, and offering for me and my wife x<sup>s</sup>, and to the recorder v<sup>s</sup>, and to the swerdberer iiij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>, and to ev'y thing that is specyfyde in a note of an indenture by my consayle and theirs late made; and also to fynde iiij tapres, yche of them waying x li., to brenne aboute my tombe at owre lady masse, and a nother in the worshipp of saint John the Evangeliste, the thred in worshipp of saint Thomas of Cant'burey, and the iiij<sup>th</sup> in worshipp of saint George. Item, I bequeith my beste aulter clothe of golde with the fronteletts, my white vestament, my candilstyckes of silver, and my best chalice that s'veth for my chappell: my best masse booke to remayne in the forsaid chappell in the abbey of the towre hill. Item, I bequeith to iiij prestes of the same abbey x<sup>s</sup> so that they say xxx dayes aftyr that I am buried ther iiij dayes a masse and a dirige by note, and to pray speccyally for the sowle of King Edward the iiij<sup>th</sup>, my sowle,

\* Morant's "Hist. Essex" *sub* Faulkbourne.

† The Cistercian Abbey of S. Mary Grace, near Tower Hill, commonly called New Abbey, founded by Edw. III. Sir Thomas Montgomery built the Lady Chapel there.

‡ Bower Hall in West Mersey.

§ Alice, sister and co-heir of the testator, and wife of Clement Spice, of Black Notley who died in 1483.



my wyfs sowlys, my fadres sowle, my modres sowle, my sustres, and for the sowle of my uncle my lorde of Sudley, and my uncle Thomas Montgomery, and my sust' Ann Montgomery, and for the sowles of Alice Spice, for myn executors and for all my frendys that I am moste bounde to, and for all cristen sowlys. Item, I wyll that ev'y monk of the same abbey, beeing no preeste, v<sup>o</sup> to helpe to sing and say xxx masses and dirigis for the said sowlys, and that ev'y clerk of the said abbey helping to sing in the queere, have iij' iiij<sup>d</sup>. Item, I bequeith to ev'y pour man being at my burying, a penny to pray for my sowle. Item, I will that myn executors pay trewly all my detts, that can be of trewthe provyd, in all haste after my deceasse, and therto I pray them and require them. Item, I wyll that the p'sone of flalkborne have for some certyn thing that is most necessary for the same church x li. Item, I wyll that ev'y preste in Syon, Shene, Hounston, and the Chartrehouse in London, have xx<sup>d</sup>, prating them to remembre me according to their graunte of brother hode to me, \* to say a masse and a dirige by note for me; and also I will that suche as be brethern and in the abite of any of the said housis, being no preste and dwel ther, ev'y of them to have xij<sup>d</sup> for to say placebo and dirige for the said sowlys. † Also I will that ev'y preste being in the coventis of Chelmysford, Colchestre, Maldon, Sudbury and Clare have xx di. to remembre me and my said wyffe and for the forsaid sowlys in v masses, and that ev'y preest of the said howsis being, being no prest, ‡ have xij<sup>d</sup> for to say placebouz and dirigis § for the said sowlys. Item, I bequeith to ev'y of the said v housys xxi' so that they say masse and dirige for me, and for my wyfes, and the said sowlys, and to remembre me at ther masses as the custume ys. Item, I bequeith to ev'y preest of the howses of Lazars || xiiij' iiij<sup>d</sup> to remembre me, and my wife, and the said sowlys in x masses; and ev'y chanone of the said howsing, being no preste, xx<sup>d</sup> for to remembre the said sowlys in xij placebouz and diriges. Item, I wyll that ev'y preest dwelling w'in v myle of flalkborne have xx<sup>d</sup> to say v masses, placebo and dirige for my wife and for the said sowlys. Item, I wyll that ev'y preest of the orders of freres in london, ther dwelling, have xij<sup>d</sup> to remembre the said sowlys in three masses; and ev'y younge preiste, being no preist, in the said howsyes have vi<sup>d</sup> to say three placebouz and dirigis. Item, I will that Maist' Goddard th' elder, Maister hubbard, and the monk ancre of byrre regis, the ancre in the wall by byshoppes gate, ev'y of them to have xx' to remembre the said sowlys in lx masses, and to remembre my name and my wyfes in ther s'monys by a yere after my deceasse. Item, I wyll that the nonnes

\* See Note to the Will of Sir Thomas Tyrell, p. 81 ante.

† *Placebo and Dirige.* The anthem "Placebo Domino in regione vivorum," with which the vespers for the dead open: and the anthem to the first nocturn in the matins of the office for the dead, "Dirige, Domine Deus meus, in conspectu tuo viam meam." The term Dirige is an abbreviation of the Latin *dirige*.

‡ *Sic in originali.* Priest in the first instance is used very singularly, in a large sense, for a Religious or Ecclesiastic. The obvious meaning is, "Every member of the Convent not being in Priest's orders"—whether Deacon, Sub-Deacon, Acolyte, or Lay Monk. Further on we find "Every young priest being no priest;" and "Every Canon being no priest."

§ *Sic in orig.*

|| The Lazar or Leper Houses near the metropolis were the Locke, in Kent Street, Southwark; one between Mile End and Stratford le Bow; another between Shore-ditch and Stoke Newington; a fourth at Knightsbridge, and a fifth near Holloway and Highgate.

mynorez \* at london have xx' that they say a dirige and a masse by note for me and my wifes and the said sowlys. Item, I will that the p'son of Wedington, Maist' John Bretton and Doctor Stokys Iche of them to have x' to remembre the said sowlys in xxx massis and ther s'mones a yere. Item, I bequeith to Maist' Robert Walker xl', and to Maist' William Goodale xx' to remembre me and my wyfes and the said sowlys afore rehersed. Item, I bequeith to the Vicary of Coggeshale, the Vicary of Witham, the p'son of Chelmysforde, the Vicarie of branktre and the Vicarie of terlinge yche of them viij' iiij<sup>d</sup>, so that they or ther deputies remembre to pray for my soule and my wifes ev'y sonday, ij yere after my deceasse at the bedys bydding, † and to pray for me and

\* The Franciscan Nuns, called Minresses or Poor Clares.

† Bidding the Beads (from the Saxon *Biddan*, to pray or desire; and *Bead*, a prayer.) When the Priest read the Bead-roll or proclaimed the names of the dead and living for whom the congregation were invited to pray.

After Henry VIII. had apostatized, by setting himself up as the head of the Church in England, among other things he kept was the bidding prayer, for which he sent out the form following: "This is an order taken for preaching and bidding of beads in all sermons to be made within this realm. First, whosoever shall preach in the presence of the King's highness . . . . shall, in the bidding of beads, pray for the whole Catholic Church of Christ, as well quick as dead. . . . Item, the preachers in all places of this realm, not in the presence of the King's said highness . . . . shall, in the bidding of the beads, pray first . . . . as above ordained and limited, adding thereunto in the second part for all arch-bishops and bishops, and for the whole clergy of this realm, and specially such as the preacher shall name of his devotion; and thirdly, for all dukes, earls, marquises, and for all the whole temporalitie of this realm, and specially such as the preacher shall name for devotion: and finally, for the souls of all them that be dead, and specially for such as it shall please the preacher to name.—Wilkins, "Concil.," t. iv., p. 783: see also p. 808, *ibid.*—From "The Church of our Fathers, as seen in St. Osmund's rite for the Cathedral of Salisbury, with Dissertations on the Belief and Ritual in England before and after the coming of the Normans."—By Daniel Rock, D.D., Canon of the English Chapter, Vol. II., p. 360.

For giving out the names from the bead-roll, the custom was that the parish should allow a certain yearly stipend: hence we find, as the following, entries in old church-wardens' acco'mpts—"to the parische prest for the redynd of ye bede rolle on ye sondais, xijd.—("Hist. of Sandwich," by Boys, p. 364.) Individuals, too, bequeathed money to have themselves especially remembered at the Sunday-beads: A.D. 1480. Avery Cornburgh had written upon his grave in Romford Church the following, among other verses:—

"Moreover this call to yowr remembrance anon,  
That in the beadröll of vsage euery Sunday redd;  
The sowls of this Avery, Beatrice, and John  
Be prayed for in speciall; so that owr will be spedd  
And that the Curate of this Church curtesly be ledd,  
And for his labour have in reding of that roll  
Forty pens to prey for them and euery Christian soul."

(Weever's "Funeral Monuments, p. 403.) It seems to have been in some places the Curate's office to read out the Sunday bead-roll, and the emolument arising from its discharge a part of his benefice; sometimes may be met with a note of the money paid for this service, as for instance: "To Maister Darby, for the bederolle for a yere, 2s."—(Churchwarden's Accts. of St. Mary Hill, London, A.D., 1510, Illustrat., etc., by Nichols, p. 105); P<sup>d</sup> to Sr Robert for D'Beyd roylle, 2s."—*Ibid.* p. 309. (*Ibid.* p. 363.)

The Epitaph from which the Very Rev. Dr. Rock has quoted the above stanza, occurs at p. 648 of the Edition of 1631. It consists of eight stanzas, and contains particular directions for the election of the Chantry Priest, and the special duties he was required to perform.

The formulary, called the Bidding Prayer, which the Church of England in the 55th Canon directs to be used before all sermons, lectures, and homilies, is well known.

my wifes oon day in the weke aftre the custume ys. Itm, I will that w'in ij monethis aftre my deceesse, or also sone as it may be, that ther be disposed for me, w' the masses above declared, iiijm' masses so that I may have for ev'y iiij a masse w'in Essex, london, Suffolk, Norfolk and Cambridgeshire, and that I fayle not of iiijm' massis with the said masses a bove declared, w'in ij monethes after my deceasse yf it may goodly soo be broughte a bought.\* It'm, I wyll ther be found ij honest prests to goo to Rome and Iche of them to sing for King Edward, for me and for my wifes sowlys at scala ceely, † for xij monthis day, and goo the stacions ther † for owre sowlys, and my wifes sowlis, and the sowlys aforesaid, and they to have for their labour as myn executors can agre w' them. It'm, I will that iff an honest preste will take a ponne him to say, pray and faste the grete trentall for King Edward and my wifes and the sowlys a fore said, as Dame Elizabeth Walgravis prest dydde at burez, § he shall have xij m'ks. It'm, I will that the ancre of Carrowe by Norwich, and the Ancre of lynne eche of them to have x' to pray for me and for my wyffs, and for the sowlis a bove wrytten. It'm I will that w'in ij monethis aftre my deceesse ther be disposed by myne executors to pou' people and to the power householders at falkborne theras I dwell, and in the townys that my lyvelode-lyes in, in Essex, and in the townys next adjoining c m'ks in recompence of my coomon doole, for I will no comyn doole make. || It'm, I will that ther be disposed among the pou' people and householders at Chaulton to pray for me and the sowlys above said xx mc. It'm, I wyll that ther be disposed c li. and mor in amending noyous high weyes, by the discrecion of myne executors, w'in a yere aftyr my deceasse. It'm, I will that tho' that pay but viij\*

\* Great as was the number of Masses ordered, it was frequently equalled and sometimes exceeded by the directions of other Testators in the 15th and 16th centuries. Joan Beauchamp, Lady Bergavenny, by her will dated 14 Jan., 1434, ordered "that anon after my burying, there be done for my soul five thousand Masses in all the haste that they may be goodly:" and the famous Cardinal Beaufort says, "I will that ten thousand masses be said for my soul as soon as possible after my decease, namely, three thousand of requiem, three thousand '*de orate celi desuper*,' three thousand of the Holy Ghost and one thousand of the Trinity. Robert Darcy, buried in the Church of All Saints, Maldon, 1469, ordered two thousand to be said within six weeks. I hope, however, to print a series of the Darcy wills hereafter, as well as that of Henry Lord Marney, which is exceedingly rich in reference to religious rites and observances in connexion with the foundation of the almshouse at Layer Marney.

† *Scala celi*, adjacent to the church of S. John Lateran at Rome. It is composed of twenty-eight steps of marble, sent, or reputed to have been sent, from the house of Pontius Pilate, in Jerusalem, to S. Helena the Empress. Known at Rome as *Scala santa*.

‡ It need hardly be said, perhaps, that "to go the Stations" was to perform the devotion of the *Via Crucis* or Stations of the Cross. Vicarious pilgrimages and devotions were not unusual.

§ Elizabeth, Lady Waldegrave, wife of Sir Thomas Waldegrave, of Bures S. Mary, in Suffolk, who was knighted by Edw. IV. at the Battle of Towton. She was daughter of Sir John Tray, Chief Baron of the Exchequer. It must not, of course, be inferred that Lady Waldegrave's priest fasted throughout the Great Trental more rigourously than the rules of the Church ordinarily prescribed; nor did he fast on the intervening Sundays or on any Holy Days which might have occurred. So that the fast, although severe, was possible.

|| The indiscriminate distribution of dole at funerals often caused great scandal and disorder. The poor flocked in large numbers from the surrounding country and scrambled for the loaves which were thrown among them. On this account, probably, the testator wisely resolved to make no common dole.

and undre to the Kings taxe in the townys that I have lyvelode in w<sup>in</sup> Essex, that my executors pay for them, as for oone taxe, wherinne it comyth next afre my decease. It'm, I will that xvi li. be bestowed in byinge of vestiments, ev'y vestement havyng my armes with my wyfes armes, pec. the vestiment xl' \* to be geven to the churgis of Whight Notley, Moche Tey, Cressing, moche braxtede, Witham, ffayrestede, Terlinge, and Ryvonhalle, for a remembrance for me. † It'm, I give and bequeith to my sust' Alice Langley † ij ffetherbeds, ij bolsters, ij hanging beddes of course verdure, and that myne executors shalby as moche say as will hang ij metely chambours for the same beddys. It'm I give and bequeith to her ij basins, and viij ewers, and two pottys which I have at London, which, with a standing cuppe gylt, vi bollys with a cover that I have at London, and L li. in money, in forme following, that is to say xxv li. anone after my deceasse, and other xxv when she deceith, to this entent, that she may be honestly buried, and to make a gravestone to lay on her for a remembrance, provided alway that yf her husbonde or she vex or trouble my wif or myne executors of any poynt in my wylle or testament, that then all that I have above bequeithed her to be voyde, and myn executors to dispose it for the weale of my soule, It'm, I geve to Dame Lore my wyfe s̄ marc in money and s̄ marcs in plate, wherof ccl marcs of my best gilt plate, after iij' iiij<sup>d</sup> the onc. and other ccl marcs of my white silver plate, at her choyse, after iij' iiij<sup>d</sup> the unc. It'm, I bequeith to Dame Lore my wyfe, if she kepe herself sole and unmarried, all my beddyngs, shetys, napry and all stuffs of household, all sylver plate except, and my bedde of golde with th'angyngs of the same chambyr of custume, w<sup>t</sup> the bed that hangyth in the same chambyr except, and if it fortune the Dame lore my wyfe be married agayne, then I wyll that all the goodes and stuff be divided in iij p'ties, and she to have one part and myn executors ij p'ts, and they to sell and dispose the money therof for the wele of my soule afre the discrecion of myn executors; and if I have any issue male, thanne I wyll

\* P<sup>6</sup>c. *Precium*, for *pretium*. An interesting item as giving the cost of a chasuble.

† Although, as I formerly remarked, the Priest's vestments at this period were often enriched with secular ornaments, it must not be inferred that the direction of Sir Thomas Montgomery, that these chasubles should be embroidered with the arms of himself and his wife, was mere ostentation. As the donor he was entitled to remembrance in the prayers of the Church, and the arms denoted whose gift the vestments were. In like manner, in order that the Priests and people might remember to pray for the good estate of the founders and benefactors, their arms were emblazoned in the Church windows; and in Chantries especially, as a record of those who, according to the intention of the founder, were to be commemorated in the appointed masses. With the same view were hatchments hung up in Church.

‡ According to Morant Alice Montgomery married first to John Fortescue, Esq., by whom she had John Fortescue, who became seated at Faulkbourne Hall, which his descendants retained till the year 1637: secondly to Robert Langley, Esq., who died 29 Aug., 1499, and was buried in Little Waltham Church: and that she married again 17 Jan., 1501, to Edward Wiseman, of Rivenhall, who died in Sep., 1508, and was buried in the Church of Faulkbourne. Yet the Historian says that her husband John Fortescue died 9th June, 1518, for which he cites an *Inquis. post mort.* 10 Hen. VIII., which certainly answers thereto. But this is impossible if he were her first husband, and he could not have been her third, as she was 60 years old when her brother died (*Inq. post mort.* 10 Hen. VII.), and Robert Langley was then living. It is obvious, therefore, that John Fortescue, who died in 1518, was her son and successor, and not her husband.

that the said bed of gold w<sup>t</sup> hangyngs and the said bedd with all the hangyngs of (custym?) remayne to him : if it so fortune that I have no issue male or that all myn issue die, then I wyll it shalbe solde be myn executors and the money to be disposed for the weale of my soule and of my wyfes soule in werkys of charytie, by the discrecion of myn executors, as in high wayes, makyng beddyng, fyre and things nedeful for pou' people, trustyng to my wyfe that if I have any issue male that she wyll depart w<sup>t</sup> hym, whan that he comyth to age, such stuff as I have geven hyr as she shall thynk necessary for hyr child and myn. It'm, I wyll that all such bedding, hangyngs and household as I have in my place in London at the tyme of my deth, except my plate that my wyfe shalhave to her own use. I will that where I have bought the mariage of Wyllyam Blount, Lord Montioy, I geve it frely to my wyfe and she to marry hym as pleaseth hyr. It'm, I wyll that my said wyfe have all my catalis longyng to husbondry, as chariett, chariett horses, plough, ploughhorses, w<sup>t</sup> all the harnes that belongeth to them, and all cornes growing on the grounde aswele that w<sup>t</sup>in my places, as that which is owing me w<sup>t</sup>out, w<sup>t</sup> all my stuffe which longeth to my ketchyn, Buttre, pantre, bakehouse and to myn other houses of householde, except plate, w<sup>t</sup> xij of my best horses to be taken at hyr owne choyse.

For the sake of brevity a short abstract of the contents of the concluding portion of this testament, in modern orthography, will suffice.

Wife to keep household at "ffalkborne" half a year after my decease : household to have wages to that time. Give to wife of old Bassett of "Chesehull" £20. To Nephew Rafe Norbury,\* my godson, £20. To my niece Ann, his sister, 20 marks. To my wife her raiment and apparel and such jewels as I have given her. My servants to be rewarded as specified in a bill annexed ; if any are dead their legacies to be void and my executors to dispose of the same for my own and my wife's soul. [Other directions follow of no historical import.] Give the daughters of Cutting, sometime of Rayleigh, £5. To marriage of poor virtuous maidens, £40. To poor householders of London, considering that my body shall lie there, against my month's day, £40. To the making of "hollbrigg" £20 ; if it be not made before my death.† Residue to my executors, charging them to dispose it, as they shall answer before God, for my soul, my wife's soul, my father's and mother's souls, and my friends' souls. Appoint Executors "Dame lore my wif, Maister Pykenham, Sir Thomas Tyrell, † Sir Edward Barkeley, Knyghts, John Clopton, § Geoffrey Yong." Beseech my Lord of Canterbury, || my Lord of Oxford, Sir Thomas Burough, Kt., that they will be supervisors. Give my Lord of Canterbury a covered cup and £5 for a remembrance of me ; Dame Lore £20 ; Doctor Pykenham £20 ; John Clopton £20 ;

\* Son of one of the uterine brothers of Sir Thomas Montgomery.

† This and similar references which I have met with seem to denote that there was anciently a bridge, most probably of timber, across the Crouch at Hullbridge.

‡ Sir Thomas Tyrell of Heron, ob. *circa*. 1510-12.

§ John Clopton, of Kentwell, Suffolk, ob. 1498. Buried at Melford.

|| John Morton, Cardinal, Archbishop and Lord Chancellor, ob. 15 Sep., 1500.

Geoffrey Yong £10; Robert Rochester \* £20, and a cup of silver gilt with a cover. Give Sir John Ramston £10; to his brother £100, to the intent to find them to school and learning.

A Codicil is appended dated 20 Sept., 1492. All else that I need extract are the testator's directions for the foundation of a perpetual obit in the Abbey of S. John, Colchester.

As for my manors of Cookes and Nethersall w<sup>t</sup> ther appurtenances, and a tenement that I bought of John Kente, I wyll and require my feoffees that yf th'abbot of seint Johannes of Colchestre and the covent there wylbe bounden by indenture in lyke wyse as I shall send them a copy, that is to saye kepe myn obite for me and for my wyfe ev'y yere on the day of my deceasse, that is to say, on th'even a solemne dirige by note, and a masse on the morrowe by note, and to geve to xl pou' men to knele abowte my herse to pray for me and my wyfe iij' iiij<sup>d</sup>, and to ev'y of them a lof of brede of j<sup>d</sup>, and ij penyworth of ffleshe; and to ev'y bayly of the seid borough, if they come and offer at my masse, xx<sup>d</sup>, and to the p'sone of falkborne for the tyme being iij marcs by the yere of lawful money of England for ev'more, to p'forme this aforesaid, that than they to convey it for ev'more or els it to be sold be myn executors and the money to be employed in mendyng of high weyes and other charitably dedys by the discrecion of myn executors. †

Three more Wills of the ancient family of Tyrell may appropriately follow this. The first is

THE WILL OF SIR ROBERT TYRELL, KNIGHT, DATED 30<sup>TH</sup>  
DEC., 1507.

He was the fourth son of Sir Thomas Tyrell, of Heron, by Anne his wife, daughter of Sir William Marney, of Layer Marney, and is described by Morant as of Horndon on the Hill; but from his will he appears to have resided at Wyvenhoe. His first wife was Christian, daughter of John Harlston, by whom he had two sons, Thomas, who was a Priest, and Robert, his successor, of Warwicks, in this county, who died 16 Oct., 1555, leaving issue; and a daughter, Margery. His second wife, mentioned in his will, is said to have married afterwards to Edward Mackwell. There is scarcely any mention of Sir Robert

\* Robert Rochester, Controller to the Household to John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, ob. 4 May, 1506. Buried at Terling.

† The proposed endowment was the Manor of Nether-Hall, alias Cook's Hall, in West Bergholt. I find no evidence that the testator's intention was carried into effect; on the contrary, the Manor was in the possession of John Abell, Esq., at the time of his death in 1523.

Tyrell in Essex History, \* and I believe that the particulars contained in his will are quite new information. Testator says,

ffirst, I geve and comende my soule to almighty god, to our lady seynt Mary the virgyn and to all the holy company of heven. And my body to be buried w<sup>in</sup> the churche of the greyfriars of Colchester, by Dame Christian my wif. Also I bequeth to the high awter of the churche of Wywenowe for my tithes and offerings negligently forgotten and not paid vi<sup>o</sup> & viij<sup>d</sup>. It. I geve and bequeth unto iiij p<sup>y</sup>sshe churches aboute to Downham, to either of them vi<sup>o</sup> & viij<sup>d</sup>, my soule among the p<sup>y</sup>shens to be praed for. Also I will that the said freers shalhave paid by th<sup>ands</sup> of myn Executors, or by their Executors or assigns, by the space of twenty yeres, of my lond v<sup>o</sup> marcs yerely sterling, condicionally that the Wardeyn, or his successours, shale appoynte a freere & broder of the same covent to syng for my soule and my sade late wif soule and for the soules that I am moost bounden to doo for, for the space of the said xx yere, that is to say iiij marc for the Preate synging, and xij<sup>o</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> yerely for myne obite and my said wif keeping. Item, I will that myn executors shall make an arche of ffreestone in the wall w<sup>in</sup> our ladys chapell ther as I and my last wif shall lye. And also I will have a stone of marbill to be laid on me and my wif in the said place ov<sup>r</sup> o<sup>r</sup> grave, and a Remembrance of my name and hirs in the m<sup>ball</sup> stone. And I woll that Dame Elizabeth, now my wif, fro xi yeres next after my deceesse shall have during her life naturall such lands as she is now enfeoffed in.

I am not aware that the place of interment of Sir Robert Tyrell was before known. Of the remainder of his will I give an abstract in modern English.

Wife to have her apparel and plate that was hers "at our meeting and myn," and to deliver to my executors all my plate, jewels, bedding, and other stuff; if she do anything against this will my bequest to her to be void; my executors to have all her plate and mine to pay my debts and all the moveable goods that she and I have, to be disposed for the health of my soul, except her raiment. Give to Robert my son all my lands and tenements. Remainder to my daughter Margery, except x marcs by the year that shall be sold for the health of my soul and all the soules that I am bound for. Thomas Tyrell,\* my eldest son, to have an annuity yearly for life of x marks out of my lands and tenements to his exhibition at Cambridge, "Oxenford," or any other place to the time he shall be preferred to a benefice of xx li. by the year, and after he shall

\* An imperfect account of this branch of the Tyrell family will be found in Morant's "Hist. Essex," Vol. II. p. 344 *sub* Birdbrook, where the Historian erroneously calls the testator Sir John Tyrell, of Horndon on the Hill. He is speaking of Robert Tyrell, Esq., of Warwicks, who died in 1555, and whom he there calls the son of Sir John instead of Sir Robert, fourth son of Sir Thomas Tyrell of Heron. Under East Horndon he is correctly named.

† In some MS. genealogies this Thomas Tyrell, who was a Priest, is erroneously called John.

be benefited the said rent shall go to Robert my son and hers. Margery my daughter to have cc marks at such time as her husband shall make her a sufficient jointure in lands and tenements of the value of xl marks sterling. Appoints Executors, "Willm Alove, lerned man in the lawe, John Danyell, Robert Teryll my son, and Walter Wyngfield and Willm Cooke, Doct', and give each 40'." These honest p'sones witnesses and records, Maister ffabian p'sone of the Church of Wyvenow and James, p'ysshe preest ther. Robert Rochester, Esquyer, Davy lewis, Vincent Baytt and other moo'.

**THE WILL OF JOHN (*by Morant erroneously called Thomas*)  
TYRELL OF HERON, Esq., WHO DIED 3<sup>d</sup> APRIL, 1514.**

He was the eldest son of Sir Thomas Tyrell of Heron, by Constance, daughter of John Blount, Lord Mountjoy, and grandson of Sir Thomas Tyrell of Heron, who died in 1510 (or 1512). Morant's narrative pedigree, *sub* East Horndon, is very complicated and confused: he calls this John Tyrell *Thomas*, and says that he served Sheriff of Essex in 1517, but it was evidently Sir Thomas Tyrell, his father, who was Sheriff that year, as the roll in Morant's Introduction to his History shews.

John Tyrell married Anne, daughter of Sir William Browne, Lord Mayor of London, by whom he had two daughters, Catherine aged 7 in 1540, and Gertrude then aged 6 months. His next brother Henry, inherited the chief of his estates, and was afterwards knighted.\* John appears to be the only head of the house who died without attaining that distinction; but he evidently died young, and had been but a short time in possession of the estates. His widow afterwards married the celebrated Sir William Petre, founder of the Petre family in Essex, and was mother of John, first Baron Petre.

As the will is comparatively of small interest, I insert an abstract only of its contents, chiefly in modern orthography.

"In the name of the Father, the sonne, and the holly goste, Amen." To be buried in the Church of "Este Hornedon." Give "to the High Altar for tithes forgotten 30'." "I bequith to the reparacons of the churche yarde pale of Thornedon aforesaid ten shillings. To my brother harry a complete harnes such as he will chose, and his chose hadde, I will an other complete harnes to my lord mountyoie such as he will

\* Sir Henry Tyrell lies interred under a plain slab in the chancel of Downham Church, with the following inscription engraven on a brass plate, in Roman letters:—"Here lyeth buried good Sir Henry Terrell, Knight, & Dame Thomasin his wife, who decessed the 20 of May in the years 1588."



chose." \* [Small legacies to servants.] To each of my brethren Sir William Tirell, Knight, † Thomas Tirell, Charles Tirell and George Tirell. 40<sup>s</sup>. To Charles and George all my wearing apparel equally. † To my lady, my mother iij marks. To sister Keble and sister Knight each 40<sup>s</sup>. To Roger Bexwell my farmer my best horse, and such duty as he owes me except rent. To Anne my wife and Katherine my daughter my term of years in the Manor of "Downton" which I hold of the President and Fellows of King's College, Cambridge, and the manor of Sampford, which I have on lease from my mother for 30 years. Goods, chattels, and household stuff to my wife and daughter equally. Appoint executors my said wife, and Vincent Mundy, Citizen and Goldsmith of London, and give him £6 13s. 4d. Give £6 13s. 4d. to repair the highway by my park pale of Heron. Whereas I have been at great cost and charge for obtaining and saving certain great and "mayne" woods which Sir Thomas Tyrell, Knt., my late father (whose soul God pardon) was purposed to have felled and sold away, and which by my means have been kept as well at Heron as at divers other places; and whereas I have been at liberty after the decease of my said father to dispose of my inheritance at pleasure, yet have always so favoured my brother Harry, or him whom it shall please God to make my heir, trust that my brother Harry, for that my own time has been but short, and therefore I am not of such substance in goods to set forth and advantage my said daughter, will favourably look upon her, and for my sake, considering these premises, will give her some honest sum of money for her advancement. Witnesses Charles Tyrell, my brother, John Blake, Gent., George Bexwell, Thomas Mundy and divers others.

The following portion appears from its tenor to have been nuncupative :—

The testator about 20 days after the execution of the above will appointed John Browne, of London, Gent., co-executor with the said Anne and Vincent, and gave him a like legacy. Granted to his brother "George Turrell" the lease of a farm called "Crease" for 21 years, and gave to Katherine Tyrell his daughter all his lands, tenements and leases (to her and her heirs), as well by him purchased of his father, or any other

\* The armoury at Heron must have been extensive and well furnished, the bequest of these two suits of armour (probably two out of many) is the only mention I have yet met with of the military equipment.

† Sir William Tyrell was a Knight of Rhodes, otherwise a Knight Hospitaller or Knight of S. John. He is sometimes assumed to have been a brother of Sir Thomas Tyrell, and consequently uncle to the testator. Morant has in this instance correctly called him a son of Sir Thomas by Constance Blount, as the will proves, and the date of his death corroborates. He outlived the dissolution of his order in England and was interred in the Church of S. Martin, Ludgate, as appears by the following entry in "Machyn's Diary:"—"1557 the xvj day of the same moneth [Nov.] was bered at Sant Martens in Ludgatt Master . . . Terrell, Captayn of the Galee and Knyght of Rodes sumtyme was; with a cote, penon, and ij baneres of emages, and iij haroldes of armes and ij whytt branches and xij torchys and four grett tapurs."

‡ The bequest of raiment by and to persons of high rank is not remarkable, considering the rich description of apparel worn, its great cost, and the scarcity of money. And the outer garment was a loose and ample gown.

person or persons. But if any of the heirs male of the said John should offer to buy the same, they to have pre-emption. Witnesses, Anne Tyrell, George Tyrell (brother), Thomas Mennes, Roger Bexwell and others. Proved 18 Nov., 1540.

**THE WILL OF ANNE, LADY TYRELL, OF LONDON, WIDOW.  
DAT. 1552. PROVED 1562.**

This Lady was the Widow of Sir John Tyrell, of Little Warley Hall, Knight, who died in 1540-1. According to Morant, this Sir John Tyrell married Anne, daughter of Edward Norrys, by whom he had five sons, John, William, Stephen, Ralph and Maurice; and one daughter, Gertrude, who was the first wife of the famous Sir William Petre. But assuming that Sir John Tyrell had only one wife (and we find no mention of a second), it is manifest from his will, that, at the time of her marriage with him, she was the widow of John Hopton, by whom she had a daughter Elizabeth; and that Sir John had also a son named Humphrey, and three daughters Friswith, Margaret and Mary, who had been a Benedictine Nun in the Abbey of Barking, none of whom are mentioned by Morant.

Lady Tyrell is described in her will, dated 16th July, 1552, as "Dame Anne Tirrell, of London, Widow."

To be buried where it shall please God. Give to Morres Tirrell my son all my plate, "that is to saye xij silver spoones with postells; \* iiij fetherbeds, iiij bowlsters and v pillowes, iiij coverletts whereof one is lyned, iiij paire of fustian blanketts and all my shetes and other lynnyn now beinge in the said house wherein I doe now remaine. Item, ij chestes of Cipres† and one cheste bounde with Iron, ij chestes of wainscote and the other of fur, and ij basketts. Item, I give to Morres my said sonne xx li. which Richard Crayford of Doverj (*sic*) in the County of Essex doth owe unto me, and x li. which William Lukkens dwellinge in Chancery lane neere unto Lyncolne's Inne doth owe unto me, and all the brasse and pewter now beinge in the said house where I doe now remaine. To my daughter, Elizabeth Perryn, a flat piece of A unicornes horn.‡ To the poor people of the Hospitalls, xl." Give residue of

\* The well-known "Apostle Spoons," so called from the handles terminating in figures of the Twelve Apostles. See note p. 187.

† Chests of cipress used to keep linen in are frequently mentioned in old wills.

‡ The value of this apparently trifling bequest will be duly appreciated by those who know that the "Unicorn's horn" was supposed to be a preservative against poison. Raine, in his "Hist. of North Durham," says that it was the tooth of the monodon or sea unicorn that was imposed upon the world as the horn of the unicorn, and was sold at an extravagant price on account of its supposed virtue. John Notyngam, grocer, of Bury, in his will dated 1437 bequeaths "Par cultellorum quorum manubria sunt de cornu unicornii."—(*Bury Wills, ed. Samuel Tymms, F.S.A., Camd. Soc. Pub.*) The trenchers upon which meat was served at table were called "flat pieces," but a section or small tablet of the horn or tooth is here meant.

plate, goods, jewels, &c., &c., to Morres my son whom, with my cousin Guy Crayford, I make executor. Proved 26 Nov., 1562.

Other wills of the Tyrells may perhaps find a place in our journal hereafter. Some, of which I possess full abstracts, contain valuable information for County and Family History, but as they do not subserve the especial object of these papers, previously indicated, I will extract a few testamentary directions and bequests by other Essex folk, which may prove of more general interest.

**THE WILL OF EUSTACE SULYARD, OF FLEMINGS IN RUNWELL, ESQ., DATED 1<sup>ST</sup> EDW. VI., AND PROVED IN 1547,**

Is a valuable instrument as it contains a description of the family plate, the state bed, and mention of the armoury; and a schedule annexed gives the prices of various household utensils, bedding, napery, &c., in the reign of Edw. VI.

The Sulyards of Flemings were of an ancient Suffolk family; and the manor came into their possession by the marriage of Edward, eldest son of Sir John Sulyard, Knt., one of the Justices of the King's Bench temp Hen. VII., with Elizabeth or Mirabel, daughter and heir of Thomas Copdowe, Esq., by Anne his wife, daughter and co-heir of Sir Thomas Flemyng, Kt. The Flemings had been seated at Runwell from the year 1327, and from them the mansion and manor derived their name. Edward Sulyard married secondly Anne, daughter of John Norrys. By his first wife he had Sir William Sulyard, his eldest son and heir, and three other sons. By his second wife he had Eustace Sulyard, the testator, and one daughter. Sir William having died without issue his half-brother Eustace inherited Flemings, and his descendants resided there till the decease of Edward Sulyard, Esq., unmarried, 7 Nov., 1692, at the age of 72, who is described upon his monument in Runwell Church as "the last of his House and Family." Morant states that Flemings descended to his two nieces, Anne and Dorothy, therefore it probably passed under an entail, as it is not mentioned in his will, in which the name of Anne does not occur, and the rest of his landed property in Runwell he bequeathed to Dorothy. The

present representative of the family is Sir John T. Tyrell, Bart., the descendant of Dorothy Sulyard.

Flemyngs was one of the largest and most stately mansions in Essex. It was apparently a quadrangular building enclosing a courtyard, and was defended by a deep moat. Only a small portion of the edifice now remains, which seems to belong to the Elizabethan age, but probably may date as early as the time of Eustace or Sir William Sulyard. Wright says in his "History of Essex," "that a great part has been pulled down or destroyed by a fire that demolished more than thirty rooms and a large chapel. Before this accident, we are informed that the house contained above fifty spacious apartments." The Rev. Alfred Suckling, however, states that there were above one hundred apartments, and a large chapel finely vaulted with stone. The right of sepulture formerly belonged to this chapel, as appears by human remains and fragments of coffins frequently thrown up by the plough. It may be inferred from this, that part of the mansion was considerably older than the time of the Sulyards. We are further told that there were some fine ancient portraits of the Sybils and Cæsars; and that some very good paintings on glass have been preserved.\* The mansion was surrounded by a spacious park and had a large warren; and the site is one of the finest in the county, commanding an extensive view of some parts of the county of Kent, including more than thirty parish churches, and a good prospect of the sea.

Eustace Sulyard died on the 1st of Feb., 1546-7, and lies buried in Runwell Church. There is a monument to his memory in the north wall of the Chancel consisting of a niche composed of alabaster and marble, inlaid with the effigies of himself in armour and bareheaded, his wife, three escocheons of arms, and an inscription engraven in brass. The figures are kneeling at desks. From his will,

\* Suckling says that the interior fittings corresponded with the magnificence of the structure; stained glass in great profusion, tapestry, and paintings by eminent masters, sparkled in the windows and adorned the walls. Many of these decorations have been removed by the Tyrells and are said to enrich the apartments of their present residence.—"Suckling's Memorials," p. 52. The preservation at Boreham House of the decorations brought from Flemyngs is also mentioned in the "Essex Magazine."

which is very prolix and full of repetitions of his property, I present the following extracts.

Testator gives to his son Edward, when twenty-one or married, these parcels of silver plate :—

“ One basin w<sup>t</sup> an ewer of silver, parcell gylt, waing <sup>xx</sup>iiij iij ounces. Two quarte potts of silver, parcell gilte, wainge lxxij oz. Three bowles of silver, parcell gilte, w<sup>t</sup> a cou<sup>r</sup>, waing xx oz. One dozen spones, wherof iij gilte, waing xv oz. & one q<sup>r</sup>. One old casting bottell,\* parcell gilte, which was my mother's.” I will and bequeath unto every one of my daughters, for a benevolent token and natural remembrance, “ Three parcells silver plate, To ev' of them one salte w<sup>t</sup> cover parcel gilte, w<sup>t</sup> mine armes and my wives theruppon engraven, and  $\frac{3}{4}$  enamyled. waing xvi oz. and also ev'y of them vi silver spones having my Sipher engraven upon them,” when 18 or married, to be bought by my executors out of the profits of my lands and farms.

Give unto my nephew Thomas Cornwales † “ my grete horse called grey Rouse. To my nephew Henry Cornwales my other young grey horse, a gowne of black damask guarded w<sup>t</sup> velvet, a dublet of crymsen satten, and a paier of hose clocked with crymsen satten, and xl<sup>r</sup> for the translation and making of such garments as I have given unto hym. I will that Mr. Thomas Mildmay ‡ have the bedde which I owe him at his pleasure.”

I bequeath unto Edward, my eldest sonne, or to whom god shall make heyre of flemynges, all my harnes, Bowes, Arrows, Billes, pykes, pole-axes, Swerdes, daggers, gones, and other myn Abilyment of War, chargeing myn executours to see the same stowed and kepte cleane untill suche tyme as my said heyre or heyres shall come to his or her full age.

Item, I give unto Edward my son, or whoever shall be my heir, &c., after the death of my wife, “ one Sparvo<sup>r</sup> § of crymsen velvet and Tyssue of gold, pyrled, and one other of tawney damaske and yelowe damaske w<sup>t</sup> the curteyns of sarsenet belonging to the same.”

The following interesting schedule, of which I give the title in brief, is annexed to the will :—

The particulars of such implements and utensils of household as I have willed to be bought for the use of Edward my son and heir apparent (or

\* Casting Bottle. A bottle used for casting or sprinkling perfumes, said to have been introduced about the middle of the 16th century; but evidently earlier.

† Cornwallis. Sons of Sir John Cornwallis who married Mary, sister of Eustace Sulyard.

‡ Thomas Mildmay of Moulsham Hall, eldest son of Thomas Mildmay, Auditor of the Court of Augmentation.

§ Sparver v. Sparvour. Strictly the canopy or wooden frame at the top of the bed; but frequently applied to the bed itself. Lect. de Parament, a bed of State or great Sparver bed that serves only for shew or to set off the room. *Cotgrave, in voce Parament*. “A canopic or Sparver for a bed.”—“Florio,” p. 349. “The third Chamber being my bed-chamber was apparelled with rich cloth of Tyssue raised, and a grete Sparver and counterpointe of the same.”—“State Papers,” I. 239. (“Halliwell Arch. Dict.”) The tents in the arms of the Upholsterers' Company are described in the patent as *Sparvers*.

whoever shall be my heir) with parcel of the said £100 given by my will: also such parcels, utensils, &c., of household at my house at Flemynge so willed to the said Edward or my next heir.

Firste, one hole garnishe of pewter vessells w<sup>t</sup> a charger xxx<sup>s</sup>. one chafing dish of latten new v<sup>s</sup>. one basin w<sup>t</sup> an Ewer of pewter vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. iiij brasse potts fourtie shillings. iiij pannes xx<sup>s</sup>. iij kettells xiiij<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. iij spitts every of them meaner than the other x<sup>s</sup>. Item, for other utensils for the ketchen vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. Item, for veessells, kilderkins and other necessaries Tubbes vi<sup>s</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup>. iiij<sup>d</sup>.

S<sup>m</sup> xxiiij. xij. viij.

Apparell for beddinge, viz., Tikes, fethers, fustians, cou'letts, shets, sayes, w<sup>t</sup> table clothes, napkins, towells and carpetts. Two brussel Tykes of one yarde and iij quarters brode, price fourtie shillings. xx stone of lyving fethers, videlicet iiij li. p<sup>r</sup> ev<sup>y</sup> stone, price liij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>. ten yerdes of blanketts, newe, out of the pece at xvj<sup>d</sup> the yerde. two couerletts of verdure, fyne, mete for such beddes, at xxiiij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> the pece, lxxv<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. iiij pillowes of iiij yerdes of fustyan at viij<sup>d</sup> the yarde vi<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>. Six pounde of downe price x<sup>s</sup> the pounde for the same pillowes v<sup>s</sup>. Shetes tenne paire conteynyng vij ells in ev<sup>y</sup> paier. at xvj<sup>d</sup> the ell, iij ells a. cvi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. iiij Tykes countrepoint, Brussell, for bedd and bolsters conteynyng a yarde and iij quarters brode, at xij<sup>d</sup> le pece, xxxvi<sup>s</sup>. xxi stone of lyving fethers for the same at ij<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> le stone Lxi<sup>s</sup>. Tenne yarde of fustyan for pillowes at viij<sup>d</sup> the yarde, vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. xij pounde of downe to fill the same pillowes at x pens the pounde, x<sup>s</sup>. iiij cou'letts for the same beddes, price le pece xvi<sup>s</sup>—xlvij<sup>s</sup>. xv yarde of blankett out of the pece for the same iij beddes, at xiiij<sup>d</sup> the yarde, xvij<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup>. cccx ells of good lynon clothe, at xiiij<sup>d</sup> the elle, to make tenne paier of shetes for ev<sup>y</sup> bed, ev<sup>y</sup> paier to conteyn vij elles, xij<sup>s</sup> vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. pec<sup>r</sup> of beyond the Saye, red and yellowe, at xvi<sup>s</sup> the pece. iiij peces of Englysse say, of the best, at xx<sup>s</sup> le pece, iiij<sup>s</sup>. Item, my new thrombed carpet. . . . Lynnon cloth for table clothes and cupbourd clothes iiij<sup>s</sup>. Towells and napkyns liij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>.

S<sup>m</sup>. lii<sup>s</sup> x<sup>s</sup>. x<sup>d</sup>.

The particulars contained in the preceding schedule, albeit somewhat dry, perhaps, in the detail, are still, I hope, of considerable value. It is by the collection of such items and inventories that we gradually and completely refurnish the old mansions of the country, and present an accurate picture of their interiors centuries ago. In the schedule of "utensils and standards of household" at Flemynge, the items are not given, and they comprise merely the fittings of the fabric, briefly enumerated.

THE WILL OF WILLIAM HARRIS, OF SOUTHMINSTER, ESQ.  
DATED 12 SEPT., AND PROVED 14 NOV., 1556,

Is a very lengthy document, consisting of eight closely-

Y

written, equivalent to about sixteen ordinary, folios. I shall extract from it only a few passages.

The Harris family were originally of Prittlewell. William Harris of that place married Anne daughter of — Jernegan and had Arthur Harris, also of Prittlewell, who by Joanna his wife, daughter of Thomas Percy, second son of Henry Earl of Northumberland, had William Harris, the testator. Morant gives the date of his death 21<sup>st</sup> Sept., 1555, a year too early, which his will, as well as Machyn's Diary, corrects. Machyn, who most probably performed the office of undertaker, thus records his burial: "1556 the xvi day of September was bered in Essex, at Southmynster, on Master William Har[ris], Sheriff of Essex, notable ryche bothe in landes and fermes, with a penon . . . . . and cott armur and iiij baners of emages \* of armes and a vj dosen of skoychyons and mony morners, and a grett dolle." His will contains very precise directions for the construction of his tomb and the celebration of his obsequies, and shews, as Machyn remarks, that he was a man of great wealth and had large possessions. He describes himself as of Southminster, in the county of Essex, Esq., and sometime inhabiting in the parish of Rochford.

My body to be buried either in the parish church of Southminster or Prittlewell, in such place of the church as heretofore by mouth I have partly declared.

A Tombe of marble to be set upon my place of burial, to be closed with barres of iron of convenient height for the saving of the said tombe, and to be colored with redd color sett in oyles, wher uppon I will that they shalbestowe twentie poundes of currant money of England, and more if that be not sufficient, by the discretions of myn ov'seers: upon the tombe ther shalbe mencion made of me and all my wyves and posteritie and our names, and the names of every child that I had severallye by every wief for thavoyding of contention hereafter for title of my landes, for that I had my said children by severall venters; and also I will that these wordes followinge shalbe set either upon my tumber or upon the wall next my tumber—*Terra terram tegat, demon' peccata resumat, mundus res h'eat, spiritus ab'ta petat.*† My executors to distribute to such poor in Essex as they shall see fit £10; and besides other miserere obsequies and dirige, according to the order of the

\* Probably two banners of images and two of arms. Banners of images were banners with figures of saints depicted upon them.

† *Terra terram tegat, demonium peccata resumat, mundus res habeat, spiritus abdita petat.* The Rev. G. C. Berkeley, Vicar of Southminster, in reply to my enquiries, informs me that this tomb is totally destroyed. One escoccheon plate only, engraved with the arms of Harris which formerly belonged to it, is preserved in the Church.

Catholick Church ; and likewise to distribute other ten pounds at my month's day, and other ten pounds at my year's mind. And after my year's mind be passed, I will that always a yearly obit shall be kept in the parish church where I shall chance to be buried during the term of four score years, if the laws of the realm will it so long permit.\* [Testator's four sons Vincent, Arthur, Christopher and Edward and their heirs to pay to the Churchwardens 20s. yearly during the said term out of the farms assigned to them under the will, and to give bond to the churchwardens to pay the same towards the obit.] The curate of the said church shall have, to pray for me in his prayers, making my name, yearly 12<sup>d</sup>, and the residue two parts to poor people, and the residue to priests and clerks, and towards the necessary ornaments of the church. The churchwardens to have yearly for their pains 8<sup>d</sup>; and my executors shall yearly, for the space of ten years, pay to the poor of Prittlewell, Southminster and Burnham every year £6 8<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>. To the parish of Prittlewell every year 5 marks, Southminster 34<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>, Burnham 34<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>.

Testator next gives to Alice, his wife, for life, certain manors, lands, tenements, &c., and sundry plate and household stuff, and among the exceptions enumerated we get a description of some of the plate, &c., that he possessed. "To Alice, my wife . . ."

"My twoe amblinge sommer nagges which I always called her nagges, and all my plate except the followinge, my greate neste of gobletts, all gilte, with the cover, my best standing cupp, all gilte, with the cover, my salte, all gylte, with the cover, my pott gylte with the cover, my chaleys with the paton therto belonginge all gilte ; and also except one goblet, gilte, with the cover, beinge made after fishe scales, and also except two grete masers, and two silver spones, wherof thone is all gilte and thother with a vyce ;" † and all my household stuff in my house at Rochford and in my house at Southminster, "except twoe fetherbedds in the same house, next the best, with couerletts, blanketts, sheets, pillowes, pillowbeys, and all other necessaries to them belonginge beinge likewise next the beste ; and also beside twoe sewer brasse potts next the best, and also except another bed honestly furnished, beinge a fetherbedd mete to lodge gentlemens servautes in with honestie ; and also except half a garnysse of pewter next the best, wherof to be eight platters, vi dessert, vi sawcers, and also two coppill of candlestickes next the best, a chafyng dysh and two other small cansticks of the meaner sort, whether the worst or the best."

Then follows the devise of his manors, lands, leases, &c., at great length ; sundry legacies to servants and others :

"To my son Arthur all my apparell and household stuff in my chamber

\* The testator appears to have anticipated the probability of a second Reformation: and of course after the accession of Elizabeth the celebration of his obit ceased.

† Device.



at Lyncolnesinne. . . . My son Arthur shall have the use and occupyng of my cheyne of golde conteynng sevenscore and vi links for life." Remainder to son Edward for life, remainder to their heirs.

**THE WILL OF ANNE POINTZ, WIDOW OF JOHN POINTZ, OF NORTH OCKENDON. PROVED 18<sup>TH</sup> MAY, 1554,**

Is very rich and interesting in the bequests of plate, jewellery and personal ornaments. These legacies are, in fact, almost its whole contents. For an account of the Pointz family the reader will consult Morant. Anne Pointz, according to Morant, was the sister and heir of Isaac Sibley, of Buckinghamshire. John Pointz, her husband, he says, died 16<sup>th</sup> June, 1558. This date is erroneous, inasmuch as his widow died in 1554, and *The Will of John Pointz* bears date May the 30<sup>th</sup>, and was proved June the 30<sup>th</sup>, 1547. It is very brief and devoid of interest, except in that he desires "To be buried under the arch between the Chancel and the Chapel of our Lady," which determines the dedication of the North Chapel, hitherto, I believe, unknown, as well as the place of his own sepulture.\*

The following is an abstract of the Will of Anne Pointz, with excerpts in the orthography of the Register:—

Give to my daughter Frances Asteley's children, now the wife of John Asteley, of "Cunstable Melton," in Norfolk, to the men children when 21, and to the women children at the day of "the solempnization of their marriage." To Bridget Asteley eldest child and daughter, "a browch all of golde with this scripture aboute it, *Miez suys bocage qustoy danlacage*,† and a woman enamyled white and a cage hanging on a ragged staf with a bird enclosed in it. A standing boole of silver w<sup>t</sup> cover, all gilte, poiz xxxvij ouz. quar., more, two saltes of silver, parcell gilte, with cover poiz. xix oz. quar. dd. and money xx<sup>li</sup>." To Anne Asteley second child and second daughter, "a tablet of gold with Adam and Eve tempted by the Sperite figured over their hedds, one on thone side, and this scripture aboute it, *Come forth Troughte though falsehoode be wrowthe*; † and on thother side, a man holding a brawnche of flowers in his hande, and a woman holdinge a harte in her hande, and this scripture

\* There is a remarkable series of alabaster tablets sculptured in relief representing the ancestry of the Pointz family, in North Ockendon Church. The figures are in armour of various periods considerably anterior to the date of the sculptures, suggesting the probability that some have been copied either from painted glass or that the sculptor represented some portions of ancient armour then remaining in the family mansion. I append this note from recollection only, after a lapse of some years.

† *Miez sui bocage que toi dans la cage.*

‡ *Come forth truth, though falsehood be wroth.*

aboute them, *Take you here my harte with love and love more.* A ringe of golde, a Turkeys \* in y<sup>t</sup>; more fiftene score and xxij links of my own chayn of golde fasioned like the lynks of a cote of male and not much bigger, but some what thycker then they comenly be; more, an eye for abillyment of xl garnet stones rounde like beddes and xliij peaces of golde between them, enamyled blewe in the mydest; more, a playne salte of silver with a couer gilte, poiz by estimacon, xxij oz: more two standing potts of silver, all gilte, with drawen strypes, playne, poiz <sup>iiij</sup>xxij oz. more, a dozen silver spoones with the xij apostells, parcell gilte poiz . . . . oz. dd. more, a gilte spoone with Christ at th'ende, † poiz by estimacon one oz. dd, and in golde of half soverann of Henry theights coyn three score pounds." To Isaac Asteley "a hoope of golde, my first husbands weddinge ringe, sometyme. To Jacob Asteley, the saide Frances fyveth child alive and her seconde sonne alive in birth, Maister Pointz chayne of gold sometyme of tenne score and fyve lynks, fasioned rounde. To Cheny Asteley sixthe child alive and in age the thirde sonne in birth, a lady assumed all in golde with her sonne in her armes and setting on the half mone with a ruby stone in y<sup>t</sup>; † and a ringe of gold with a ruby in y<sup>t</sup>; a standing boole of silver with a cover graven all over w<sup>h</sup>out, poiz xxxij oz." To Rebecca, daughter of the said Frances Asteley "a broche all of gold with a woman sitting upon a wheale and slawinge a lyon by the backe; § a ringe of gold w<sup>h</sup> a stone in y<sup>t</sup> of a redd stone graven with an old croked man; a gilte goblet with a cover graven with Pointz armes and my owne in the topp, xxxj oz. dd. Dated 1550.

SECOND WILL.—[After commendation of her soul to God] "and my body I will to be buried in holy buriall according to the orders of the Catholicke Church with such honest obsequies and Rites as to my state and degre shalbe thought convenient by my executors." [Testator recites a certain deed, dated 6 June, 1550, "under my marke and seale" by which she has covenanted to give certain effects to the children of Frances Asteley, and now gives them over and above as follows,] unto Anne Asteley daughter of the said Frances, "Item, my paire of beades made of the garnetts given her afore by my deade with small golden beades between the garnetts, and all manner garnisshing longing to them. Item, a nother billiment of pearle garnisshed with the gold that was aboute the said garnetts given her as afore conteyning lvij peeces. Item, an upper billyment of gold, poiz two ounces quar. whiche the Quenes highnes gave me at her coronation. Item, a nother upper billiment of golde and pearle, conteyning civ pearles and xxxij peeces of golde given me by the Quenes highnes for my new yeares gifte. Item, a ringe of golde with a ruby given me also by my Lorde of Cumberland. || Item,

\* Turquoise.

† A complete set of thirteen Apostle Spoons, the handles finished with figures of our Lord and His Apostles. They were frequently given by Sponsors at Baptism to the child. Wealthy persons gave a full set; others one, two, four or more, according to their means. These elegant and artistic spoons are again brought into use and some very good sets have been manufactured.

‡ "A lady, &c." A clerical error, no doubt, for "Our Lady:" the well-known representation of the Assumption of the B.V.M., derived from the Apocalypse, ch. xii., v. 1. Brooches and earrings of the Assumption were common.

§ Perhaps St. Catherine.

|| Henry Clifford, Baron Clifford and Earl of Cumberland, died in 1569.

a hoope of golde enamyled blacke, poiz about an angell. Item, in gold fourtie pounds; and more, one soveraigne of xxx<sup>s</sup>, a double duckett of xxiv<sup>s</sup>, a Ryall of xv<sup>s</sup>, a duckett of xiv<sup>s</sup>, an angell of x<sup>s</sup>. Item, besides one louse gowne of blacke damask and a round kertill of blacke satten . . . . .”

“ I will also to the said Anne Asteley for service done me at corte and diligent attendance used towards me in my sicknes, and I will that these said purcells shalbe delivered to the said Anne on the day of her marryage as thother things given her.” If she die before, they to be divided between her brothers and sisters. [Other small legacies of money and apparel to servants, &c.] Dated 16 May, 1554. Proved 18 May, 1554.

### One or two extracts from

#### THE WILL OF THOMAS HASTELER, OF RAWRETH, DATED 22<sup>ND</sup> JAN., AND PROVED 4<sup>TH</sup> FEB., 1527-8,

Are introduced chiefly on account of the singular order given in the directions for his funeral, as well as for the purpose of shewing what religious rites an opulent yeoman of the time thought proper to ordain should be performed for his soul's health.

Thomas Hasteler at the time of his decease held the lease of the Manor of Rawreth Hall, was owner of a farm called Burrells, divers tenements, which he divided among his sons, and possessed sufficient personalty to leave four of them 20 marks apiece in money, and to three others £6 13s. 4d. each. A brass plate with the following inscription to his memory, engraven in old English, exists in Rawreth Church:—

Of yo<sup>r</sup> charite pray for the Soules of Thoms Hasteler,  
Alys Elynore & Johan his wyf which Thoms decessed y<sup>e</sup> xix  
day of January y<sup>e</sup> yer<sup>e</sup> of o<sup>r</sup> lord m<sup>b</sup>.xxvii on whos soules Jhu  
habe mercy.

A rubbing of this brass (preserved, I believe, with others in the parish chest) was sent to me in the year 1847, several months after I had visited the church. No mention of the family of Hasteler, or of this inscription, occurs in Essex History. To me it has been the key to a repository of a great deal of parochial and family history that has been concealed for at least three centuries, and which

collaterally leads to the discovery of more. I venture to say that no other key nor any other clue was in existence. Yet, after all, valuable as this solitary memorial is, it is of minor importance in comparison with others which are irrecoverably lost. If the reader have visited many Essex Churches, with the recollection only of those inscriptions recorded by Salmon and Muilman, he must have been surprised at the amount of monumental destruction which has happened since they wrote, and even within our own recollection; and equally surprised to find so many monumental brasses detached from their slabs, with no friendly hand to secure them in their places.\*

We deplore the sacrilegious violence of political or religious fanatics in past ages which deprived us of so many monuments of ancient art; but the deliberate, thoughtless, or capricious aggression of the modern Church Restorer upon sepulchral memorials, surely deserves severer censure, and is equally fatal to the pursuit of historical and archæological research.

It has become a very recent practice among Church Restorers to bury sepulchral slabs beneath the pavement. The morality or the legality of this practice it is not our business to discuss. It is, however, exciting the serious attention of Archæologists.† We may countervail the ravages of time by transcription, but are foiled by this

\* I have on several occasions seen monumental brasses exhibited at antiquarian meetings in London; and I know of others in private possession. They have usually been purchased of dealers, but the Churches from which they have been abstracted are unknown. Rubbings of some large escocheons in brass, bought in London, and believed to have come from a Church in Essex, were sent to me from Cambridge-shire; but I have not been able to appropriate them. Not long since I endeavoured to purchase some small effigies of the 16th century, exhibited by a door-plate engraver in my own neighbourhood, who, however, declined to part with them, as he kept them for "shew plates." I gave an account of the robbery of brasses from the ruinous Church of Chingford a few years ago. Also, in the "Gentleman's Magazine," I published an inscription from a brass from a Church in Norfolk, purchased by a friend in London. It recorded the endowment of a parochial charity by the person commemorated. The Church to which it belongs was discovered, and its restoration proposed: but so little interest was apparently felt about it there, that I believe it is considered safer, at least *pro tem.*, in private hands. Mr. Suckling informs us that the inscription plate upon the monument of John Tanfield in Margaretting Church was wrenched off and sold by a late parish clerk, tempted thereto by the trifling value of the old metal.

† "On the Preservation of Sepulchral Inscriptions," by T. W. King, Rouge Dragon, "Arch. Journal," Vol. I., p. 135.

"Remarks on the Desecration and Robberies in Sacred Edifices," by Vice-Admiral W. H. Smyth, F.R.S., F.S.A., &c., &c.

"Collectanea Antiqua," Vol. V., p. 248, by C. Roach Smith.

newly devised species of vandalism as effectually as if the slabs were totally destroyed.\*

Church Restorers and Church Officers are too often neither acquainted with, nor interested in, their parochial history, and are, therefore, incapable of judging of the value of a name, a date, or a sculptured escocheon which might open to the antiquary a volume of past history. This is not their fault; we have not all the same tastes; do not possess the same acquirements; cannot all adopt the same pursuits. But ignorance becomes culpable when it is mischievous, and the spirit of destructiveness must be restrained. If there be no competent authority to check or to control the spoliators, Archæologists, at any rate, will not cease to bear witness against them.†

To the historian, the antiquary, and the genealogist, sepulchral inscriptions are invaluable, and now that the Public Records have been rendered more generally accessible, the epitaphs have acquired a more practical value as a ready index, and often the only references to documents among the national archives.‡

In his will Thomas Hasteler says—

I bequeath my soul to Almighty God, the Blessed Mary, and all the Holy Company of Heaven, and my body to be buried in the parish church of S. Nicholas, Rawreth. Give to the high altar of S. Nicholas Rawreth, for my tithes negligently forgotten 6<sup>s</sup>. 8<sup>d</sup>., and a “weder sheep

\* When I took Church-notes at Low Leyton, I sought in vain for the tomb of the celebrated historian and antiquary the Rev. John Strype. I addressed the Editor of the “Gentleman’s Magazine” on the subject, but no information respecting it was obtained. Only recently I have been informed that the slab has been interred beneath the pavement of the Sacarium. Strype was a great benefactor to Low Leyton; he rebuilt the Parsonage and executed extensive repairs upon the Church, in great part at his own cost. He was studious to preserve sepulchral remains. *Teste* his great work, “Strype’s Additions to Stow’s Survey.” The fate from which he studied to preserve the inscriptions of others, has in brief space fallen upon his own.

† Thus, at Leigh, where a good deal of monumental destruction was accomplished in 1837-8, the earlier register being lost, and no records relating to a parochial charity being in the possession of the parish, the Church authorities, in their united wisdom, threw down the only tomb which gave me, last year, a clue to the complete elucidation of the History of the Moyer Charity, which was the result of three several testamentary benefactions at long intervals, proving at the same time that Morant’s account is both confused and erroneous. The Report of the Commissioners for Charities, whatever may be considered its legal value, is, in my judgment, a happy illustration of “the blind leading the blind,” as well as a standing record of official incompetence. The destruction and interment of sepulchral slabs of course renders such investigation daily more difficult, if not impossible. I had copied the inscriptions in that Church, fortunately, a few years before the hand of the *Restorer*? had passed over it.

‡ Inscriptions frequently pronounced illegible, are often perfectly legible to practised eyes; and there are several ways of bringing a faint and detrited inscription into clear and prominent relief.

to be afore droove to goo before my bodie to the church at the day of my buriall." To Sir William my Curate to pray for my soul 2\*.

The wether sheep was clearly an offering in kind to the High Altar.

With respect to the celebration of his obsequies, the testator says :—

An honest priest to be found to sing mass for my soul, the souls of my friends and all christian souls, for two years in Rawreth Church, with dirige and commendation twice a week, taking yearly for his salary £6 13s. 4d. ; and immediately after my decease my executors cause to be sung at Scala Cœli \* at the freres of London and Essex as many trentals of mass for my soul, my friends souls and all Christian souls, as shall amount to £6 13s. 4d. Also that my executors bring me honestly to the earth with dirige and three masses by note, and do honestly for me, and keep a solemn month's mind and a year's mind ; and half of my goods not bequeathed to Thomas Hasteler, the elder, and John Hasteler, the elder, [two of testator's sons] whom I make my executors, my executors shall dispose for the health of my soul, and the other half to my executors and other children if alive.

John Hasteler, no doubt one of the testator's sons, was tenant of lands in South Bemfleet, under Henry Appleton, Esq., in 1545. I find also the Will of John Hasteler, of Prittlewell, yeoman, proved in 1599. He was probably grandson of Thomas Hasteler of Rawreth and left issue, male and female. His will, though it enumerates many of his household utensils, is of no special interest, but it shews that the family still maintained a good position as well-to-do yeomanry.

An opulent class of yeomanry was fast rising in the latter part of the 15th century, many of them destined in one or two generations to take rank among the landed gentry and become "gentlemen of coat armour." Thomas Cocke, of Prittlewell, was a wealthy yeoman in the reign of Hen. VIII., and also a man of very ancient lineage. One of his nephews and successors wedded a daughter of Thomas Lord Wentworth, Chamberlain to King Edward VI. Two members of the family obtained distinct grants of arms, and acquired the rank of gentlemen.†

\* A representation of the *Scala cœli*, at Rome, at which the same devotion was prescribed and practiced. The altar was at the top of the *scala*.

† A grant of arms was made in 1587, by Sir William Dethicke, Garter, unto "John Cocke, of Prittlewell, son and heir of John Cocke, of Shopland, Esq., and Elizabeth, his wife, one of the daughters of the Rt. Hon. Thomas Lord Wentworth, Lord Chamberlaine to King Edw. VI., which John was the son of Richard Cocke,

I insert several extracts from

**THE WILL OF THOMAS COCKE, OF PRITTLEWELL, DATED 21<sup>ST</sup> JULY, 1544, AND PROVED 7<sup>TH</sup> FEB., 1544 (i.e., 1545),**

giving the precise date of some extensive reparations on the north side of Prittlewell Church which are very distinctly marked by the masonry, and affording some particulars relating to the Confraternity of Jesus in that parish.

The testator describes himself as "Thomas Cock, yeman of the Kings Majestys most honorable Guard, late of Prittlewell, in the county of Essex." He dates his will at "Cales," 21 July, 1544; but the attestation shews that it was read at Prittlewell in the presence of witnesses and subsequently formally executed at Calais by the sign manual of the testator. The attestation runs as follows:—

Read in the presence of John Smith and Thomas Byrch, yeomen of the Kings Majestys honorable Guard, Thomas Salmon of Lye,\* and Wylyyam Salmon of Prittlewell and others, but also subscribed the same with mine own hand at "Cales," the day and year above written, per me, Thomas Cocke.

Thomas Cocke held the lease of the farm called Shelford and Bredworth in Foulness, well stocked with sheep and oxen; owned a farm called Reynolds in Shopland; oyster layings in Little Wakering; many houses and shops in the town of Prittlewell; and other houses, woods, crofts, and

the son of John Cocke the elder, and anciently descended by proof of sundry evidences (from one Ranulphus Cocus) dated in reign of Hen. III., Edw. III., Hen. IV., Hen. I., &c." Then follows the blazon: "Sables and gould indented per pale. Crest a unicorn's head coupé per pale, gould and sables upon a chapeau Royall gules, lined ermine."—Harl. M.S., 1507. A grant also appears to have been made to John Cocke, of Little Stambidge, in 1588, "Sa. three bends arg.," by Cooke, Clarencoux. Both coats are quartered on the monument of Mary, wife of Richard Davies, and eldest daughter of John Cocke and Elizabeth his wife, daughter of Lord Wentworth. Mary Davies died 2 Sept., 1623.

\* Leigh. Thomas Salmon, of an ancient family resident there for three centuries. He died 5 Aug., 1576, aged 70, and was interred in the Church with an inscription in brass, now lost. Other sepulchral memorials of the family, however, remain, including a mural monument of Robert Salmon, Esq., Master of the Trinity House in 1617; one of his sons, Peter Salmon, was an eminent physician in the 17th century; educated at Eton and King's College, Cambridge; and a graduate in Arts and Medicine of the Universities of Cambridge, Oxford and Padua. (*Per. penes me.* Dr. Monk's "Hist. of the Coll. of Physicians.") Several valuable and most interesting monuments in Leigh Church were destroyed or removed during the restorations about the year 1837. Iconoclasm and vandalism are not confined to 17th century Puritans.

sundry parcels of land in the parish. He mentions his brothers William and Richard; and three nephews Thomas, John and Robert Cocks.

Without regard to the order in which they occur, I will first notice those passages in the will that have reference to the Jesus Guild. All that has been hitherto known of it is what is mentioned by Morant, that in "King Edward the IV<sup>th</sup> reign, lands and tenements were put in feoffment here, by two wardens, one master, one priest, and certain brethren, to find a priest called Jesus Priest; which chantry was worth at the suppression 7<sup>l</sup> 17<sup>s</sup> 0<sup>d</sup>., and in the Certificate it is said that this was a populous town, having 300 houseling people."\*

At the east end of the south aisle of the Church is a large chapel, measuring 24ft. 10in. by 19ft. 3in., which was most probably the Jesus Chapel. It has an east window of four lights and two triple light windows upon the south.

On the south side of Prittlewell street there is a house still called "Jesus House," but presenting no marks of antiquity.† It is now occupied, as I am informed, as a beershop, and has a garden attached. That it stands upon the site of the ancient Guild House, and is the same property described in the will of Thomas Cocks as "my house that I bought of the Brotherhood of Jesus Guild," cannot be doubted. In another part of his will he says, "The Brothers of Jesus owe me £8 10s. sterling, I will that my executors receive it of them, and of the same I will that they shall employ and bestow v marks in table cloths and other necessaries for their feast." The Reformation had very probably caused a laxity in the management of their affairs; the brethren were largely in debt to Thomas Cocks, they had sold to him some of their property, perhaps anticipating that they might not be able to retain it long, and in the next reign all the residue of the endowment was seized by the Crown. In 1575 it was in the

\* Houseling People, i.e., Receivers of the Sacrament of the Altar, (Anglo Saxon, *Husel* v. *Husel*), which, down to the reign of Edward VI., undoubtedly comprised the whole of the adult population; so that an estimate may be formed of the approximate number of inhabitants at this date.

† I am informed by the proprietor that in a title deed, dated 1799, it is described as "Jesus Hall."



possession of John Cocke, of Little Stambridge Hall, nephew of the testator, who had married the daughter of Lord Wentworth, and to her he left it for life, by will dated 1574, under the title of "Jesus Hampstalls."

Thomas Cocke also leaves to his nephew, John Cocke, a tenement described as "my house next the Church gate." This ancient tenement is still standing and from its position (abutting upon the grave yard) may possibly have been the dwelling of the Jesus Priest. He gives also "towards building the north part of the Church of Prittlewell 40<sup>s</sup>." This work is very distinctly marked. Nearly half the length and about two-thirds of the height of the north wall of the chancel towards the nave are six inches thicker than the rest, and a plinth of the same projection is also continued to the eastern extremity of the wall. The thicker portion seems to define the limit of the reparation, which probably consisted of the rebuilding of the easternmost part, setting the new wall on the old foundation, and leaving that as a plinth. One half of a constructional arch of brick may be seen in the thicker part of the wall, the other half having apparently been cut away by the alteration.

The following is testator's legacy to the poor :—

My executors shall cause three bushels of wheat to be baked and made into penny loaves, and a bullock to be killed and distributed to the poor people yearly at Christmas even, as long as the lease of Shelford and Bradworth do continue, in whose hands soever they shall be.

John Cocke, of Little Stambridge Hall, in his will, dated 12 December, 1574, and Proved Jan. 27, 1575, orders the same benefaction to be continued in these words, "My executors to distribute yearly one ox and half a quarter of wheat, baked, to the poor of Prittlewell, according to the gift of my late uncle, Thomas Cocke." And the following bequest refers to a structure of which I cannot learn that any record or even a tradition exists: "To the building of the Market Crosse of Pritwell 100<sup>s</sup>." He gives these small legacies: "To the R<sup>t</sup>. Hon. Thomas Wentworth, K<sup>t</sup>., Lord Wentworth, my wife's brother, one Portegue of gold.\* To Mr. Henry Wentworth, my lord's brother,

\* Portague, a Portuguese gold coin worth about £3 12s. It was much esteemed in England, but was not unfrequently of base metal, gilded. It is a very common legacy in old Wills.

Mr. William Wentworth, my lord's eldest son, and to his brother, Henry Wentworth, each 20<sup>s</sup>. To Mrs. Margaret Wentworth, my wife's sister, my nag called "Button."

These are the chief points of interest in the two preceding wills. With some extracts from

**THE WILL OF BARTHOLOMEW AVERELL, OF SOUTHMINSTER, GENTLEMAN, DATED 1 MAY, AND PROVED 29 JUNE, 1562,**

I will conclude this paper. The first of this family mentioned in Essex history is Henry Averell, of London, goldsmith, who died 13<sup>th</sup> Nov., 1540, and was succeeded by his son John, who deceased 20<sup>th</sup> Sept., 1554. His cousin Bartholomew Averell, the testator, nephew of Henry, was his heir, then aged 42. The Averell family had considerable estates in Warley, Rainham, Thundersley, Great Stambridge, Canewdon, Fambridge, Southminster, &c.

The testator gives the following directions for his burial:—

"I will to be buried in the church of Southminster aforesaid, before my pue, betwene it and the chauncel, and one marble stone to be laied upon me, with the pictures and names of my wives and children to be graven upon the same. Item, I give and bequeath unto the poore walking people that resort to my burial vi<sup>d</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup> iiiij<sup>d</sup>, and also those at my month's day v<sup>d</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup> iiiij<sup>d</sup>.\* To ev' y poor parishioner of Southminster and Althorne, that have neither lands nor cattals, vi' viij<sup>d</sup>." . . .

Give "to Henry Hall all my cotes of clothe of what col' soever they be, and all my hose and dubletts of fustian: and all myne other apparell I give to my brother Will'm Averell, whensoever he requireth after my decease. I give to every of my cov'nant s'vauntes a blacke cote of vi' the yerde." . . .

Omitting the devise of his manors and estates, though of value for the purpose of county history, I extract a list of sundry articles of plate bequeathed to his wife and daughters. He gives to "ffelise," his wife,

"xij silver spoones called slippes, one salte p'cell gilte of silver, a grete square salte of silver parcell gilte, ij booles p'cell gilte with a cou'r, and a silver goblet, parcell gilte, a white silver pott, with a haunche and a haunche and a lidd, thre cou's all gilte." . . . : Residue of plate

\* It is noteworthy that the observance of the "month's mind" still lingered. It may be doubtful how it was observed. Probably by an Eucharistic celebration as prescribed in the Latin prayer-book of Queen Elizabeth. "*Celebratio Cense Domini in Funebribus*," (si amici et vicini defuncti communicare velint).

not bequeathed to go to my three daughters, in which division to be made Grace and Elizabeth shall have "two great gylte saltes and ij doz. silver spones th'on dozen with maiden hedds, th'other with rounde knoppes." [Mentions a legacy of his uncle Henry to be given to poor maidens to their marriage, still in his hands, which he orders to be disposed as his uncle desired.]

Testator left three daughters co-heirs, viz., Mary, wife of John Sammes, aged 19, Grace aged 11, and Elizabeth, 8 years old. He mentions three brothers, William, Bennett and Harry Averell, and his brother-in-law, Vincent Harris. Appoints Arthur Harris, his son-in-law, executor.

It will have been noticed that the few Wills from which I have already printed extracts have corrected many errors of Morant. Others, of which I have either copies or abstracts, rectify many more. The errors in date, and the confusion of persons are, in fact, more frequent than I could have anticipated, while his genealogies are often defective and inaccurate.\* This is becoming daily more apparent by my own limited researches, and the more extended investigations of others. Every Essex Historian who has succeeded him has implicitly followed his text, and consequently repeated his errors; but no one has hitherto supplied his omissions.

Of the learning and industry of Morant I would speak with the most profound respect. When he had access to original documents he is undoubtedly trustworthy, for his ability as an historian and topographer, and his skill as a paleographer, cannot be questioned. Numerous errors were inseparable from so great a work begun and completed by one man, who for the most part was obliged to trust to transcripts of records made by others, and to collections formed at various periods, whose accuracy, with all the unusual facilities which he possessed, he could not always verify. At the present day liberal access is afforded to students to almost every Department of the Public Records.

\* Take, *e.g.*, one illustration which I have at hand, where Morant, vol. I., p. 263, makes Sir Roger Appleton to have died 26 Feb., 1557, mistaking him for his grandson, and giving him the possession of considerable estates which were not acquired until the next generation. I had recently prepared an elaborate genealogy of this family, perfect down to the extinction of the Baronetage; but my labour is brought to an abrupt termination by information lately received, that the sepulchral memorials of the descendants of the family have just been buried beneath the pavement of Shenfield Church. Do Church Restorers bury their own family monuments or only those of other people?

Few, however, possess the leisure, fewer still, perhaps, the taste to endure the tedious and solitary occupation of transcribing Wills and Inquisitions, with the definite object of thoroughly revising the County History. But that it does require revision throughout is certain, and I have scarcely touched a Will which does not rectify some inaccuracy. In truth, a History of Essex is yet to be written. But such a work is almost the labour of a lifetime, and the present generation is hardly likely to witness its accomplishment. The labours of the Essex Archæological Society, and the MSS. of Private Collectors and Annotators, may, however, furnish materials which will enable some future Historian to fulfil the task.

---

## THE TYRELL BADGE.

By H. W. KING.

MANY of the more ancient families of the nobility and gentry bore a Badge or Cognizance in addition to, and distinct from, their armorial bearings, which was used almost with as much frequency as the armorial ensigns themselves. It was embroidered upon the habits of their domestics and retainers ; it decorated their furniture and apartments, and appeared in painted windows ; it was sculptured upon the walls of their mansions, and is often seen among the architectural embellishments of the churches of which they were the founders, patrons, or benefactors ; but more especially was it conspicuous in its profuse repetition upon their military standards.

The Badge must not be confounded either with the Crest or the Device. The Crest is invariably set upon a torse, or a chapeau, or issues from a coronet. A Device was adopted upon some special or particular occasion, such as a joust or tournament, and was accompanied by a motto or legend containing some covert or significant allusion to it. Dallaway ascribes the origin of Devices to "about the year 1460, during the Neapolitan wars, when the use of coat armour was relinquished in a great measure by the Italian chiefs, who caused certain emblems or symbolical devices to be painted upon their shields, illustrated by short classical allusions and quotations, descriptive either of the particular enterprise or of the general character of the bearer ;" and defines the Device or impress as, "a painted metaphor or rather an enigma inverted."\*

\* Dallaway's "Inquiries into the Origin and Progress of the Science of Heraldry in England," p. 391. At a solemn tourney between the Earls of Leicester and Oxford, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, these impresses and mottoes were displayed. 1. An ostrich holding a key in her mouth. "Spiritus durissima coquit." 2. A rock in the Sea. "Conantia frangere frangunt." 3. An urn with incense. "Sic tua nos virtus." 4. An unicorn dipping his horn in the sea. "Venena pollo." 5. The sun bursting through a cloud. "Obvia nubila solvent." 6. A rock in the sea. "Naturæ non artis opus." "MSS. Dugdale Coll. Arms." Note *ibid.* 392. In reference to the 4th device and motto, see note p. 179 *ante*, "Ancient Wills," on the supposed power of the unicorn's horn to dispel poison.

It may, perhaps, sometimes have happened that a device assumed for the occasion was subsequently adopted as the household Badge in commemoration, for example, of a successful encounter in the lists in which it was first borne.

A Badge was sometimes selected from a charge in the coat of arms, but much more generally it was adopted as containing some allusion to the name, office, estate or circumstances of the bearer, and was, perhaps, almost invariably a kind of rebus, though that term seems more applicable to the Device. We have one notable example of this, when Thomas Moubray, Duke of Norfolk, appeared against Henry, Duke of Hereford (King Henry the IV<sup>th</sup>), in the celebrated joust at Coventry, upon a horse covered with trappings of velvet, embroidered with lions and *mulberry* trees intended to typify his name. The badge of Marguerite of Anjou, was a Daisy; that of Thomas of Woodstock, the Stock of a Tree; Catherine of Arragon bore a bundle of Arrows. Similar examples of allusive badges might be adduced, and although the derivation of others is involved in obscurity, yet, were the circumstances known, the majority would probably be found to have originated in a pun or rebus. A few certainly owe their origin to some memorable achievement and are consequently badges of more honourable distinction, such as those of Pelham and De la Warr, which had the following origin, as related by Collins:—\*

“John de Pelham was a person of great fame in the reign of Edw. III. He attended that victorious monarch in his wars with the French, and was a competitor in taking John, King of France, prisoner at the battle of Poitiers, on Monday, Sept. 19<sup>th</sup>, 1356. Froysart gives an account that with the King were taken, besides his son Philip, the Earl of Tankerville, Sir Jaques of Bourbon, the Earls of Ponthieu and Eue, with divers other noblemen, who being chased to Poitiers, the town shut their gates against them, not suffering any to enter, so that divers were slain, and every Englishman had four, five or six

\* Collins's "Peerage," Vol. II., p. 87, edit. 1768. Jacob's "Peerage," Vol. I., p. 342. Sir John Froissart mentions neither de Pelham nor De la Warr in connection with the capture. He is very circumstantial in his relation that the surrender was to Sir Denys de Morbeque. "Froissart's Chron.," Vol. I., p. 223, Smith's edition.

prisoners, and the press being great to take the King, such as knew him cried 'Sir, yield or you are dead!' Whereupon, as the Chronicle relates, he yielded himself to Sir Dennis Morbeck, a Knight of Artois in the English service, and being afterwards forced from him, more than ten Knights and Esquires challenged the taking of the King. Among these," adds Collins, "Sir Roger la Warr, and John de Pelham were most concerned; and in memory of so signal an action, and the King surrendering his sword to them, Sir Roger la Warr, Lord la Warr, had the *Crampet* or *Chape* of his [*i.e.*, the King's] sword for a badge of that honour, and John de Pelham, afterwards knighted, had the *Buckle* of a belt [*i.e.*, the King's] as the mark of the same honour, which was sometimes used by his descendants as a seal manual, and at others the said buckles on each side of a cage, being an emblem of the captivity of the King of France, and was therefore borne for a crest, as in those times was customary."

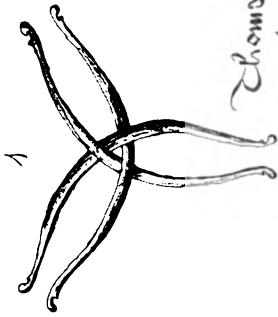
The Tyrell Badge seems to have escaped the notice of all the Essex historians, and I know of no publication which mentions it. My object in this paper is, first, to shew that *temp.* Hen. VIII. one branch of the Tyrells bore as a Badge "three bows," which are represented as three bows of riband, and then to shew that this is either a corruption of an earlier Badge of three Long Bows interlaced, or a variety adopted by the Gipping branch in which the allusive meaning of the original Badge is completely lost.

I have long known that Thomas Tyrell, of Gipping, in Suffolk, in the reign of Hen. VIII., carried upon his standard a peculiar badge, namely an interlaced and endless knot, and I have been accustomed to designate it the "Tyrell knot."\* By the courteous consent of G. H. Rogers-Harrison, Esq., F.S.A., Windsor Herald, I am enabled to present to the Society an accurate etching of

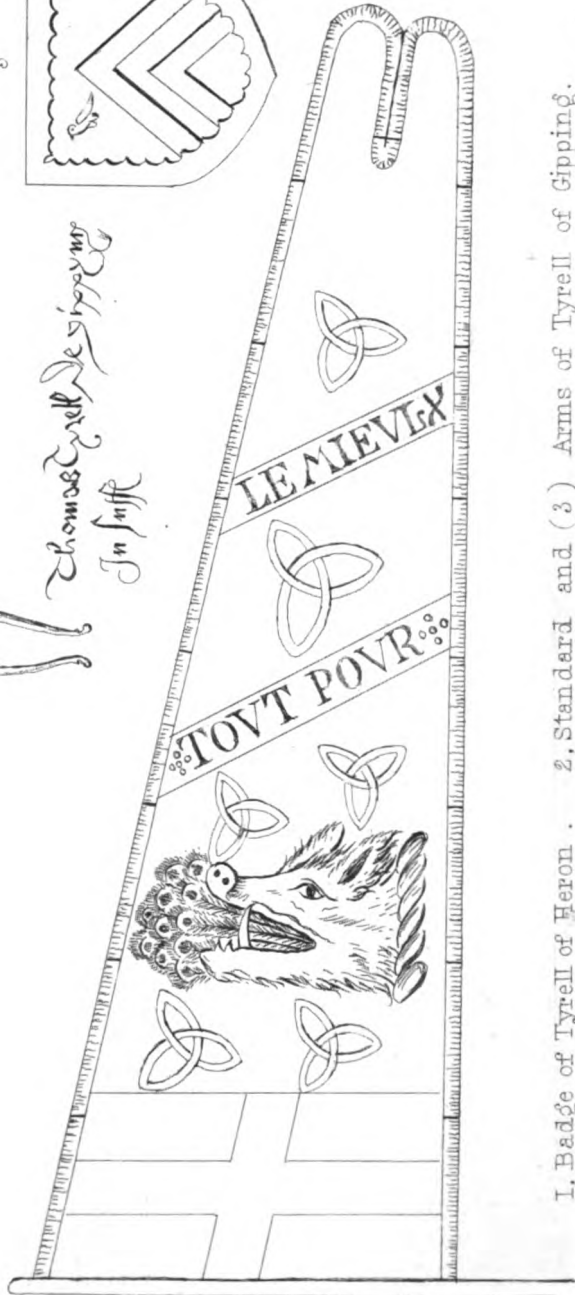
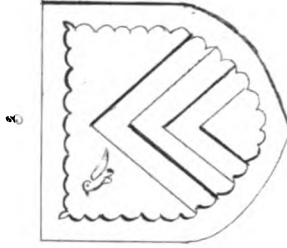
\* Several families used a Knot for a household badge; *e.g.*, the Lacy Knot, the Stafford Knot, the Bouchier Knot, the Bowen Knot, and the Wake Knot, all of which are either allusive, or form the initial letter of the bearer's name. The fretted bows have quite as close a fanciful resemblance to the initial letter T. There are also the Heneage, Harrington, Hungerford and Dacre Knots. The Hungerford Knot unites their own badge of a sickle with a garb the badge of the Peverells; and the Dacre Knot connects their own escallop with the ragged staff of the Nevills. The Dacre badge may be seen on an old chair, brought from Belhus, which stands at the north end of the altar in Aveley Church.







Thomas Gifford  
In Siff



1. Badge of Tyrell of Heron . 2. Standard and (3) Arms of Tyrell of Gipping.  
H. W. Conway del. sc.

the Standard of Thomas Tyrell, of Gipping, copied from the original in a MS. volume of Standards of Knights and Nobility, *temp.* Hen. VIII., in the College of Arms. \*

It is unnecessary to describe a standard to archæologists, but as there is an almost universal popular ignorance of what a standard is, I venture to describe it here for the sake of others into whose hands this Journal may chance to fall, trusting that my antiquarian readers will pardon the digression. †

Firstly, then, a standard is invariably of the shape indicated in the engraving, but it differs in length according to the rank of the bearer. Every standard must have the cross of S. George in chief, that is next the staff. It is usually crossed diagonally by two or three motto bends, in which is inscribed the *cri de guerre*, war cry, or motto; but occasionally the *cri de guerre* or motto runs lengthwise across the upper part of the standard, and sometimes the motto bends are omitted. ‡ The crest is placed in the first division, next the cross of S. George, and the remaining divisions are usually filled with repetitions of the family badge, or with charges taken from the coat of arms. But the coat of arms is never emblazoned upon a standard. The field of the standard seems to depend, as a rule, upon the tinctures of the arms; but probably the field was sometimes of the liveries of the house, when those liveries differed, as in some instances they did, from the colours of the family escocheon; for the Percy standard was tawny.§

\* The etching is a reduced *fac simile*, half the size of the original drawing. Vide "Excerpta Historica" for a descriptive account of the standards in this volume which, *inter alia*, contains ten standards borne by knights and nobility in Essex.

† For example, that which is popularly known, and invariably called by the newspaper press, the "Royal Standard" or the "Standard of England," is not a Standard, but the "Royal Banner of Arms."

‡ The prime origin of the motto was undoubtedly the *cri de guerre*. The more recent "mot," or sentiment came in with the custom of devices. It is plain that it could never have been borne beneath the shield as at present displayed. Its proper place was upon the standard. Some few families retain their ancient battle-cry with a more recent motto.

§ In early times the standard was so large that it could not be borne in battle, but travelled upon wheels, and was set in the centre of the field where it formed the rallying point for the army. In later times the size was reduced and regulated. In the reign of Henry VIII. the prescribed length of the standard, according to rank, was as follows. The King's Standard, set before the Pavilion or Tent, not borne, 11 yards; borne, 8 or 9 yards. A Duke's standard, borne, 7 yards; an Earl's 6 yards; a Banneret's 4½ yards; a Knight's 4 yards. (Harl. MS. 2358.) MS.

The standard of Thomas Tyrell, of Gipping, is charged as usual with the cross of S. George ; the crest a boar's head erect, out of his mouth a peacock's tail ; six repetitions of the Tyrell Badge in the form of three bows of riband forming an interlaced and endless knot, and the motto inscribed in the bends in old French, *Tout pour le mieulx.*

I have now to demonstrate that the Tyrell badge, instead of three bows of riband forming an interlaced and endless knot, was originally three Long Bows fretted or interlaced.

In a former paper I have adverted to the miserable and pitiable destruction of Heron Hall, of which every historical memorial seems to have perished in its fall. From the Powell MSS. (*Add. MSS. 17460-1 B.M.*) I extract the following interesting memorial relating to the Tyrell Badge:—\*

“*Dunton.* Proceeding we came to another large farm house ; in one of the rooms we found an ancient wainscoting of oak with several shields of the arms of Tyrell, and *the badge of the three bows*; in the window, a shield lozengy, were the escallops of Coggeshale, and another badge of that eminent family likewise, &c., &c. They were removed from Heron House.

“*Note.* My cousin, the Rev. Harry Powell, Rector of Horndon, told me (1828) that he had lately visited this place and house, and informed me that not a single panel or piece of carved wood remained there, nor could he learn what was become of them.”

We might have been uncertain from this description,

*Iansd. 255, f. 431,* contains the following statement: King's standard, not borne, 11 yards ; borne, 8 or 9 yards ; Duke's  $7\frac{1}{2}$  yards ; Marquess's  $6\frac{1}{2}$  yards ; Earl's 6 yards ; Viscount's  $5\frac{1}{2}$  yards ; Banneret's  $4\frac{1}{2}$  yards ; Knight's 4 yards ; all to be borne. Standards were appointed for Knights, and were not borne by persons of lower rank. The Guydon, which resembled the Standard, but was only from  $2\frac{1}{2}$  to 3 yards long, was allowed to Esquires. Banners were restricted to Bannerets and others of higher rank.

\* For the reference to this notice of the Tyrell Badge in the Powell collection, I am indebted to our associate, Mr. Thomas C. Archer. In July, 1860, I noted in the east window of the chancel of Dunton Church, the arms of Tyrell impaling Borgatt or Burgate, denoting the match of Sir Edward Tyrell with Maud or Anne Burgate in the middle of the 14th century ; a coat barry erm. and gu. impaling de Coggeshall ; another originally bendy of eight, impaling ar. a cross gu. quarter-pierced az. The whole, I think, must be referred to the time of Edw. III. They may have been brought from Heron, or else belonged to a former window in the chancel. In some obscure nook in Church or hall the fretted bows may yet, perchance, be found.

with only the Tyrell standard to refer to, what kind of bows these were ; but Mr. Powell has fortunately preserved a drawing representing an escocheon charged with three long bows fretted in triangle.\*

It seems to me beyond doubt that the Badge was suggested by the assonance between Tyrell and the French *Tirailleur* and *Tirailleur*, in exact conformity with the usual allusive, punning mode of deriving these distinctions. Next unite the ends of the long bows and the figure of the interlaced and unending knot is formed, which, in my opinion, is not an intentional variation, but an accidental transformation and corruption of the original badge. With the exception of the Lord Braybrooke, who carries among his heraldic additamenta the badges of the rose and port-cullis, I believe there is no other family extant in the county (speaking under correction) entitled to carry this ancient species of heraldic decoration, a Badge or Cognizance.† The standard of the House of Tyrell has been oft displayed in centuries gone by in many a well-fought field, and beneath its ancient crest and cognizance many a stalwart Essex and Suffolk yeoman has rallied and charged to the Tyrell war cries—“*Sans Dieu rein !*” “*Tout pour le mieux !*”—while their leaders, true to the latest motto of their House, have ever proved themselves “*SANS CRAINTE.*”‡

\* Strictly, the badge should not be borne upon an escocheon ; but in architectural decorations, badges, and other emblems which are not armorial, are commonly set in shields.

† Sir William Petre, father of John, first Baron Petre, had, however, special licence to assume a Badge or Cognizance under the following circumstances : In 36 Hen. VIII., the King declaring his intention of invading the French dominions for the recovery of his right to the Crown of France, he appointed Sir William Petre (one of the principal Secretaries of State) one of the Council to be aiding and assisting to Queen Catherine, his consort, in the administration during his absence : and, being so aggrandized, he, in 37 Hen. VIII., obtained special licence to retain twenty men, besides his own menial servants, and to give them liveries, badges, or cognizances. (Jacob's “*Peerage*,” Vol. II., p. 408.) I have never met, however, with a badge assigned to, or borne by, this family.

‡ The mottoes of the Houses of Heron, Gipping and Boreham

## NOTES ON A MONUMENTAL BRASS EFFIGY IN GREAT PARNDON CHURCH.

By GEO. H. ROGERS HARRISON, F.S.A.,

*Windsor Herald.*

THE Monumental Brass Effigy represented in the illustration was recently taken from a drawer in the Vestry of Great Parndon Church, where it had probably lain detached many years, by George Edward Adams, Esq., M.A., &c. His brother, the present Rector, the Rev. Henry Willoughby Adams, has since caused it to be re-laid in a slab within the altar rails. This was, no doubt, its original place, as Muillman, in his "History of Essex," published in 1771 (Vol. iv. page 46), mentions this inscription as being on the floor within the Communion rails (where it remained to the present year), but as he makes no mention of the brass figure, it is possible that even then it had become separated.

The first of the Rampston family whose name we meet with in Essex history is Roland Rampston, who, on the 16 of June, 1544, became possessed of the Manors of Gowers and Buckerells, in the parish of Chingford, apparently by purchase from Geoffrey Luckyn, who had obtained a grant of it from King Hen. VIII. in the same year. He was succeeded by his son, Robert Rampston, Esq., Yeoman of the Chamber to King Edward VI., Queen Mary and Queen Elizabeth. He died possessed of it, as well as of Stone Hall, in the parish of Little Canfield, on the 3 of August, 1585. Stone Hall appears to have been previously in the possession of one Thomas Rampston.\*

Robert Rampston and his wife were interred beneath an altar tomb at the east end of the south aisle of Chingford Church, upon which were inlaid their effigies, engraven in

\* Morant's "History of Essex," sub Chingford and Little Canfield.



HERE LYETH BVRYED THE BODY OF ROWLAND RAMPSTON LATE OF THIS PARISHE GENT: WHO MARYED MARY THE ELDEST DAUGHTER OF CAPTEIN EDWARD TVRNOR OF CANNONS ESQVIRE: BEGOTTEN ON Y<sup>e</sup> BODY OF MARTHA THE DAUGHTER AND HEIRE OF IOHN HANCHET ESQVIRE W<sup>ch</sup> MARY IN KINDE REMEMBRANCE OF HER LOVINGE HVS: BAND PROVYDED THIS MONVMENT. WHO DEPARTED THIS LYFE IN THE FAITHE OF CHRIST AND IN AN ASSVRED HOPE OF A HAPPIE RESVRRECTION THE X<sup>th</sup> DAY OF SEPTEMBER 1598.

UTTING, SC.

FROM THE CHURCH OF GREAT PARNDON,  
ESSEX.



brass, and the following inscription :—“ Here under lies buried the bodies of Robert Rampston, Gent., who departed this mortal life the 3 of August, 1585, and Margaret his wife, 29 daye of Oct., 1590.” On the wall over the Monument was a brass plate, with an inscription describing his office, and recording his benefactions to Chingford and nine other parishes.\* A similar record seems to have been placed in other churches, and one still remains in East Ham Church. When Chingford Church was dismantled the altar tomb was taken down, and the slab, with its brasses, laid in the chancel, from whence they were stolen in 1857. Morant, citing an Inq. P. M. 27 Eliz., says that Robert Rampston's heir was Roland Rampston, son of his brother John,† who, very soon after his uncle's death, sold the Manors of Gowers and Buckerells. The Stone Hall estate Robert Rampston left to his wife for life with remainder to her son, Nicholas Blenceo, Esq., by a former husband.

Rowland Rampston, the nephew of Robert, is the person evidently commemorated in the accompanying effigy and inscription ; the reason for his being buried in this Church was, doubtless, on account of his intermarriage with the family of Turner, who at that time were resident at Cannons in this parish. Although a late work of art it is not without its value as an example of costume and an historical record ; on this account, partly, Mr. Adams caused it to be engraved, and now presents it as an illustration to the Journal of our Society.‡ The military effigy of Robert Rampston, and that of his wife, are gone for ever ; this one has been timely rescued from impending loss, and is now, it is to be hoped, rendered permanently secure.

\* Ogborne's " History of Essex."

† The Arms of this John Rampston, of Chingford Hall, Co. Essex, were Argt. a Cheveron bet. 3 Cinquefoils Sable, as shewn by the funeral certificate of Thos. Sympton, Cit. and Goldsmith of London, dated 9 Nov., 1631, who marrd. to his second wife, his daur. Eleanor, W<sup>o</sup>. of Capt. Thompson, of Friendsbury, Co. Kent (I. 23 fo. 45 Coll. Arms), there is no doubt but that he was the same John Rampston who married Joyce, daur. of Edmund Bardolph, of Harpenden, Co. Herts, as shewn in the Visitation of that county A<sup>o</sup>. 1672. The Arms of Bardolph are a Cheveron bet. 3 Cinquefoils, but the field is " Azure," and the charges are " Or."

‡ The block from which it has been engraved is now deposited in the Society's Museum at Colchester.



---

**END OF VOL. III.**

---